# LETTERS

ON THE

# STUDY and USE

OF

# HISTORY.

By the late RIGHT HONORABLE

HENRY ST. JOHN,

LORD VISCOUNT BOLING BROKE.

A NEW EDITION Corrected.

LONDON,
Printed for T. CADELL.

MDCCLXX.



CAMERAL ON LOW THE WAY AND A CAMERA

And the World for the Control of the consistence of the Control o

Timed for T. Circongline in

### THEMOS

# CONTENTS.

LETTER. I. OF the study of history. Page 3

# LETTER II.

Concerning the true use and advantages of it. p. 11

#### LETTER III.

1. An objection against the utility of history removed. 2. The false and true aims of those who study it. 3. Of the history of the first ages; with reflections on the state of antient bistory, prophane and facred.

#### p. 43 LETTER IV.

1. That there is in history sufficient authenticity to render it useful, notwithstanding all objections to the contrary. 2. Of the method and due restrictions to be observed in the study of it.

### LETTER V.

1. The great use of history, properly so called, as distinguished from the writings of mere annalists and antiquaries. 2. Greek and Roman bistorians. 3. Some idea of a complete bistory. 4. Further cautions to be observed in this study, and the regulation of it according to the diffe-

### CONTENTS.

different professions, and situations of men: above all, the use to be made of it (1) by divines, and (2) by those who are called to the service of their country.

p. 119

#### LETTER VI.

From what period modern history is peculiarly useful to the service of our country. viz. From the end of the fifteenth century to the present. The division of this into three particular periods; in order to a sketch of the history and state of Europe from that time.

p. 159

#### LETTER VII.

A sketch of the state and history of Europe from the Pyrenean treaty, in one thousand six hundred and fifty nine, to the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-eight.

p. 197

### LETTER VIII.

The same subject continued from the year one thousand six hundred and eighty eight.

P. 255

LETTER I.

A plan for a general bistory of Europe.

P. 391

### LETTER II.

Of the true use of retirement and study.

p. 341

Reflections upon Exile

p. 431

## STUDY of HISTORY.

## LETTER I.

Chantelou in Touraine, Nov. 6, 1735.

My LORD,

HAVE confidered formerly, with a good deal of attention, the subject on which you command me to communicate my thoughts to you: and I practifed in those days, as much as business and pleafure allowed me time to do, the rules that feemed to me necessary to be observed in the fludy of hiftory. They were very different from those which writers on the same fubject have recommended, and which are commonly practifed. But I confess to your lordship, that this neither gave me then, nor has given me fince, any diffrust of them. I do not affect fingularity. On the contrary, I think that a due deference is to be paid to received opinions, and that a due com-

compliance with received customs is to be held; tho both the one and the other should be, what they often are, abfurd or ridiculous. But this fervitude is outward only, and abridges in no fort the liberty of private judgment. The obligations of fubmitting to it likewise, even, outwardly, extend no further, than to those opinions and customs which cannot be opposed; or from which we cannot deviate without doing hurt, or giving offence, to fociety. In all these cases, our speculations ought to be free: in all other cases, our practice may be Without any regard therefore to the opinion and practice even of the learned world, I am very willing to tell you mine. But, as it is hard to recover a thread of thought long ago laid afide, and impossible to prove some things, and explain others. without the affiftance of many books which I have not here; your lordship must be content with fuch an imperfect sketch, as I am able to fend you at present in this letter.

The motives that carry men to the fludy of history are different. Some intend, if such as they may be said to study, nothing more than amusement, and read the life of Aristipes or Phocion, of Epaminondas or Scipio, Alexander or Caesar, just as they

# Of the STUDY of Hisroy.

they play a game at cards, or as they would read the story of the seven champions.

OTHERS there are, whose motive to this fludy is nothing better, and who have the further disadvantage of becoming a nusance very often to fociety, in proportion to the progress they make. The former do not improve their reading to any good purpose: the latter pervert it to a very bad one, and grow in impertinence as they encrease in learning. I think I have known most of the first kind in England, and most of the last in France. The persons I mean are those who read to talk, to shine in conversation, and to impose in company: who having few ideas to vend of their own growth, store their minds with crude unruminated facts and fentences; and hope to supply, by bare memory, the want of imagination and judgment.

But these are in the two lowest forms. The next I shall mention are in one a little higher; in the form of those who grow neither wiser nor better by study themselves, but who enable others to study with greater ease, and to purposes more useful; who make fair copies of foul manuscripts, give the signification of hardwords, and take a great deal A 3 of

of other grammatical pains. The obligation to these men would be great indeed, if they were in general able to do any thing better, and submitted to this drudgery for the fake of the public; as some of them, it must be owned with gratitude, have done, but not later, I think, than about the time of the refurrection of letters. When works of importance are preffing, generals themselves may take up the pick-axe and the spade; but in the ordinary course of things, when that preffing necessity is over, such tools are left in the hands destined to use them, the hands of common foldiers and peafants. I approve therefore very much the devotion of a studious man at Christ-Church, who was over-heard in his oratory entering into a detail with God, as devout persons are apt to do, and, amongst other particular thankfgivings, acknowledging the divine goodness in furnishing the world with makers of Dictionaries! These men court fame, as well as their betters, by fuch means as God has given them to acquire it: and LITTLETON exerted all the genius he had, when he made a dictionary, tho STEPHENS did not. They deserve encouragement, however, whilst they continue to compile, and neither affect wit, nor pre-· iume to reason.

THERE

THERE is a fourth class, of much less use than these, but of much greater name. Men of the first rank in learning, and to whom the whole tribe of scholars bow with reverence. A man must be as indifferent as I am to common censure or approbation, to avow a thorough contempt for the whole business of these learned lives; for all the refearches into antiquity, for all the fystems of chronology and history, that we owe to the immense labours of a SCALIGER. a Bochart, a Petavius, an Usher, and even a Marsham. The same materials are common to them all; but thefe materials are few, and there is a moral imposfibility that they should ever have more. They have combined these into every form that can be given to them: they have fupposed, they have guessed, they have joined disjointed passages of different authors, and broken traditions of uncertain originals, of various people, and of centuries remote from one another as well as from ours. In short, that they might leave no liberty untaken, even a wild fantastical similitude of founds has served to prop up a fystem. As the materials they have are few, to are the very best, and such as pass for authentic, extremely precarious; as some of these learned persons themselves confess.

A 4

Julius

Julius Africanus, Eusebius, and George the monk opened the principal fources of all this science; but they corrupted the waters. Their point of view was to make profane history and chronology agree with facred; tho the latter chronology is very far from being established with the clearness and certainty necessary to make it a rule. For this purpose, the ancient monuments, that these writers conveyed to posterity, were digested by them according to the fystem they were to maintain: and none of these monuments were delivered down in their original form, and genuine purity. The Dynasties of MA-NETHO, for instance, are broken to pieces by Eusebius, and fuch fragments of them as fuited his defign, are struck into his work. We have, we know, no more of them. The Codex Alexandrinus we owe to George the monk. We have no other authority for it: and one cannot fee without amazement fuch a man as Sir JOHN MARSHAM undervaluing this authority in one page, and building his system upon it in the next. He feems even by the lightness of his expressions, if I remember well, for it is long fince I looked into his canon, not to be much concerned what foundation his fystem had, so he shewed

### Of the STUDY of HISTORY.

his skill in forming one, and in reducing the immense antiquity of the Egyptians within the limits of the Hebraic calculation. In short, my lord, all these systems are fo many enchanted castles; they appear to be fomething, they are nothing but appearances: like them too, diffolve the charm, and they vanish from the fight. To dissolve the charm, we must begin at the beginning of them: the expression may be odd, but it is fignificant. We must examine fcrupulously and indifferently the foundations on which they lean: and when we find these either faintly probable, or grofly improbable, it would be foolish to expect any thing better in the fuperstructure. This science is one of those that are " a limine falutandae." To do thus much may be necessary, that grave authority may not impose on our ignorance: to do more, would be to affift this very authority in imposing false science upon us. I had rather take the Darius whom ALEXANDER conquered, for the fon of Hystaspes, and make as many anachronisms as a Jewish chronologer, than facrifice half my life to collect all the learned lumber that fills the head of an antiquary.

A Company of the Comp stand and the standard print as A STATE OF THE PROPERTY OF THE PARTY OF THE and the service constitution of All the state of t 

#### OF THE

# STUDY of HISTORY.

## LETTER II.

Concerning the true use and advantages of it.

ET me say something of history in general, before I descend into the consideration of particular parts of it, or of the various methods of study, or of the different views of those that apply themselves to it, as I had begun to do in my former letter.

THE love of history seems inseparable from human nature, because it seems inseparable from self-love. The same principle in this instance carries us forward and backward, to suture and to past ages. We imagine that the things, which affect us, must affect posterity: this sentiment runs through mankind, from Caesar down to

the parish clerk in Pope's miscellany. We are fond of preferving, as far as it is in our frail power, the memory of our own adventures, of those of our own time, and of those that preceded it. Rude heaps of stones have been raised, and ruder hymns have been composed, for this purpose, by nations who had not yet the use of arts and letters. To go no farther back, the triumphs of ODIN were celebrated in runic fongs, and the feats of our British ancestors were recorded in those of their bards. The favages of America have the fame custom at this day: and long historical ballads of their huntings and their wars are fung at all their festivals. There is no need of faying how this passion grows, among civilized nations, in proportion to the means of gratifying it: but let us obferve that the same principle of nature directs us as ftrongly, and more generally as well as more early, to indulge our own curiofity, instead of preparing to gratify that of others. The child hearkens with delight to the tales of his nurse: he learns to read, and he devours with eagerness fabulous legends and novels: in riper years he applies himself to history, or to that which he takes for history, to authorized romance: and, even in age, the defire

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. fire of knowing what has happened to other men, yields to the desire alone of relating what has happened to ourselves. Thus history, true or false, speaks to our paffions always. What pity is it, my lord, that even the best should speak to our understandings so seldom? That it does fo, we have none to blame but ourselves. Nature has done her part. She has opened this study to every man who can read and think: and what she has made the most agreeable, reason can make the most useful, application of our minds. But if we consult our reason, we shall be far from following the examples of our fellowcreatures, in this as in most other cases, who are fo proud of being rational. We shall neither read to soothe our indolence. nor to gratify our vanity: as little shall we content ourselves to drudge like grammarians and critics, that others may be able to study with greater ease and profit, like philosophers and statesmen: as little shall we affect the flender merit of becoming great scholars at the expence of groping all our lives in the dark mazes of antiquity. All these mistake the true drift of study, and the true use of history. Nature gave us curiofity to excite the industry of our minds; but she never intended it should be

made

### 14 LETTER II.

made the principal, much less the fole. object of their application. The true and proper object of this application is a constant improvement in private and in public virtue. An application to any study, that tends neither directly nor indirectly to make us better men and better citizens, is at best but a specious and ingenious fort of idleness, to use an expression of Til-Lorson: and the knowledge we acquire by it is a creditable kind of ignorance. This creditable kind of nothing more. ignorance is, in my opinion, the whole benefit which the generality of men, even of the most learned, reap from the study of history: and yet the study of history seems to me, of all other, the most proper to train us up to private and public virtue.

Your lordship may very well be ready by this time, and after so much bold censure on my part, to ask me, what then is the true use of history? in what respects it may serve to make us better and wiser? and what method is to be pursued in the study of it, for attaining these great ends? I will answer you by quoting what I have read somewhere or other, in Dionysius Halicarn, I think, that history is philosophy teaching by examples. We need but

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. I

to cast our eyes on the world, and we shall fee the daily force of example: we need but to turn them inward, and we shall foon discover why example has this force. " Pauci prudentia," fays TACITUS, " ho-" nesta ab deterioribus, utilia ab noxiis " discernunt: plures aliorum eventis do-" centur." Such is the imperfection of human understanding, such the frail temper of our minds, that abstract or general propositions, tho ever so true, appear obfcure or doubtful to us very often, till they are explained by examples: and that the wifest lessons in favour of virtue go but a little way to convince the judgment, and determine the will, unless they are enforced by the fame means; and we are obliged to apply to ourfelves what we fee happen to other men. Instructions by precept have the further disadvantage of coming on the authority of others, and frequently require a long deduction of reasoning. "Homines amplius " oculis, quam auribus, credunt: longum " iter est per praecepta, breve et efficax " per exempla." The reason of this judgment, which I quote from one of Seneca's epiftles in confirmation of my own opinion, rests, I think, on this; that when examples are pointed out to us, there is a kind of appeal, with which we are flattered, made to

bur fenses, as well as our understandings. The instruction comes then upon our own authority: we frame the precept after our own experience, and yield to fact when we refift speculation. But this is not the only advantage of instruction by example; for example appeals not to our understanding alone, but to our passions likewise. Example affwages thefe, or animates them; fets passion on the side of judgment, and makes the whole man of a-piece; which is more than the strongest reasoning and the clearest demonstration can do: and thus forming habits by repetition, example fecures the observance of those precepts which example infinuated. Is it not PLINY, my lord, who fays, that the gentlest, he should have added the most effectual, way of commanding, is by example? "Mitius jubetur ex-" emplo." The harshest orders are softened by example, and tyranny itself becomes persuasive. What pity it is that fo few princes have learned this way of commanding? But again: the force of examples is not confined to those alone, that pass immediately under our sight: the examples, that memory fuggests, have the fame effect in their degree, and an habit of recalling them will foon produce the habit of imitating them. In the fame epistle

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. epistle, from whence I cited a passage just now, Seneca fays that CLEANTHES had never become so perfect a copy of Zeno, if he had not passed his life with him; that PLATO, ARISTOTLE, and the other philofophers of that school, profited more by the example, than by the discourse of So-CRATES. [But here, by the way, SENECA mistook; for Socrates died two years, according to some, and four years, according to others, before the birth of ARISTOTLE: and his mistake might come from the inaccuracy of those who collected for him; as Erasmus observes, after Quintilian, in his judgment on SENECA.] But be this, which was scarce worth a parenthesis, as it will; he adds that METRODORUS, HER-MACHUS and POLYAENUS, men of great note, were formed by living under the same roof with Epicurus, not by frequenting his school. These are instances of the force of immediate example. But your lordship knows that the citizens of Rome placed the images of their ancestors in the vestibules of their houses; so that, whenever they went in or out, these venerable bustoes met their eyes, and recalled the glorious actions of the dead, to fire the living, to excite them to imitate, and even to emulate their great forefathers. The fuccess

### 18 LETTER II.

cess answered the design. The virtue of one generation was transfused, by the magic of example, into several: and a spirit of heroism was maintained through many ages of that common-wealth. Now these are so many instances of the force of remote example; and from all these instances we may conclude, that examples of both kinds are necessary.

THE school of example, my lord, is the world: and the mafters of this school are history and experience. I am far from contending that the former is preferable to the latter. I think upon the whole otherwise: but this I fay, that the former is absolutely necessary to prepare us for the latter, and to accompany us whilst we are under the discipline of the latter, that is, through the whole course of our lives. No doubt fome few men may be quoted, to whom nature gave what art and industry can give to no man. But fuch examples will prove nothing against me, because I admit that the study of history, without experience, is insufficient; but affert, that experience itself is 18 without genius. Genius is preferable to the other two; but I would wish to find the three together: for how great foever a genius may be, and how much foever he may

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. may acquire new light and heat, as he proceeds in his rapid course, certain it is that he will never shine with the full lustre, nor fhed the full influence he is capable of, unless to his own experience he adds the experience of other men and other ages. Genius, without the improvement, at least, of experience, is what comets once were thought to be, a blazing meteor, irregular in his course, and dangerous in his approach; of no use to any system, and able to destroy any. Mere fons of earth, if they have experience without any knowledge of the history of the world, are but half scholars in the science of mankind. And if they are conversant in history without experience, they are worfe than ignorant; they are pedants, always incapable, fometimes meddling and prefuming. The man, who has all three, is an honour to his country, and a public bleffing: and fuch, I truft, your lordship will be in this century, as

I have infifted a little the longer on this head, and have made these distinctions the rather, because the I attribute a great deal more, than many will be ready to al-

your great-grand-father \* was in the last.

\* Earl of CLARENDON.

B 2

low,

### 20 LETTER II.

low, to the study of history; yet I would not willingly even feem to fall into the ridicule of ascribing to it such extravagant effects, as feveral have done, from Tully down to Casaubon, La Mothe LE VAYER, and other modern pedants. When Tul-Ly informs us, in the second book of his Tusculan disputations, that the first Scipio Africanus had always in his hands the works of Xenophon, he advances nothing but what is probable and reasonable. To fay nothing of the retreat of the ten thousand, nor of other parts of XENOPHON'S writings; the images of virtue, represented in that admirable picture the Cyropaedia, were proper to entertain a foul that was fraught with virtue, and Cyrus was worthy to be imitated by Scipio. So Selim. emulated CAESAR, whose Commentaries were translated for his use against the customs of the Turks: fo CAESAR emulated ALEXANDER; and ALEXANDER, ACHILLES. There is nothing ridiculous here, except the use that is made of this passage by those who quote it. But what the fame Tully fays, in the fourth book of his academical disputations, concerning Lucullus, seems to me very extraordinary. "In Asiam fac-" tus imperator venit; cum esset Roma " profectus rei militaris rudis;" [one would

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. be ready to ascribe so sudden a change, and so vast an improvement, to nothing less than knowledge infused by inspiration, if we were not affured in the same place that they were effected by very natural means, by fuch as it is in every man's power to employ] " partim percontando a peritis, par-" tim in rebus gestis legendis." Lucul-Lus, according to this account, verified the reproach on the Roman nobility, which SALLUST puts into the mouth of MARIUS. But as I discover the passion of MARIUS, and his prejudices to the patricians, in one cafe; fo I discover, methinks, the cunning of Tully, and his partiality to himself, in the other. Lucullus, after he had been chosen conful, obtained by intrigue the government of Cilicia, and so put himself into a fituation of commanding the Roman army against MITHRIDATES: TULLY had the same government afterwards, and tho he had no MITHRIDATES, nor any other enemy of consequence, opposed to him; tho all his military feats confifted in furprizing and pillaging a parcel of Highlanders and wild Cilicians; yet he assumed the airs of a conqueror, and described his actions in fo pompous a style, that the account becomes burlesque. He laughs, indeed, in one of his letters to ATTICUS, at his generalship: but B 3

if we turn to those he writ to Coelius Rus Fus, and to Cato, upon this occasion, or to those wherein he expresses to ATTICUS his refentment against CATO, for not propoling in his favor the honors usually decreed to conquerors, we may fee how vanity turned his head, and how impudently he infifted on obtaining a triumph. Is it any strain now to suppose, that he meant to infinuate, in the paffage I have quoted about Lucullus, that the difference between him and the former governor of CILICIA, even in military merit, arose from the different conjuncture alone; and that Lucullus could not have done in Cilicia, at that time, more than he himself did? CI-CERO had red and questioned at least as much as Lucullus, and would therefore have appeared as great a captain, if he had had as great a prince as MITHRIDATES to encounter. But the truth is, that Lucul-Lus was made a great captain by theory, or the fludy of history, alone, no more than FERDINAND of Spain and Alphonsus of Naples were cured of desperate distempers by reading LIVY and QUINTUS CURTIUS: a filly tale, which Bodin, Amyor, and others have picked up and propagated. Lucullus had ferved in his youth against the Marsi, probably in other wars, and Sylla took

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. took early notice of him: he went into the east with this general, and had a great share in his confidence. He commanded in feveral expeditions. It was he who restored the Colophonians to their liberty, and who punished the revolt of the people of Mytelene. Thus we fee that Lucullus was formed by experience, as well as fludy, and by an experience gained in those very countries, where he gathered fo many laurels afterwards in fighting against the same enemy. The late duke of MARLBOROUGH never red Xenophon, most certainly, nor the relation perhaps of any modern wars; but he served in his youth under monsieur de Turenne, and I have heard that he was taken notice of in those early days, by that great man. He afterwards commanded in an expedition to Ireland, ferved a campaign or two, if I mistake not, under king WILLIAM in Flanders: and, besides these occasions, had none of gaining experience in war, till he came to the head of our armies in one thousand seven hundred and two, and triumphed, not over Afiatic troops, but over the veteran armies of France. The Roman had on his fide genius and experience cultivated by fludy: the Briton had genius improved by experience, and no more. The first therefore is

not an example of what study can do alone: but the latter is an example of what genius and experience can do without study. They can do much, to be fure, when the first is given in a superior degree. But such examples are very rare: and when they happen, it will be still true, that they would have had fewer blemishes, and would have come nearer to the perfection of private and public virtue, in all the arts of peace and atchievements of war, if the views of fuch men had been enlarged, and their fentiments ennobled, by acquiring that cast of thought, and that temper of mind, which will grow up and become habitual in every man who applies himself early to the study of history, as to the study of philosophy, with the intention of being wifer and better, without the affectation of being more learned.

THE temper of the mind is formed, and a certain turn given to our ways of thinking; in a word, the feeds of that moral character which cannot wholly alter the natural character, but may correct the evil and improve the good that is in it, or do the very contrary, are fown betimes, and much fooner than is commonly supposed.

### Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 25

It is equally certain, that we shall gather or not gather experience, be the better or the worse for this experience when we come into the world and mingle amongst mankind, according to the temper of mind, and the turn of thought, that we have acquired beforehand, and bring along with us. They will tincture all our future acquisitions; so that the very same experience, which fecures the judgment of one man, or excites him to virtue, shall lead another into error, or plunge him into vice. From hence it follows, that the study of history has in this respect a double advantage. If experience alone can make us perfect in our parts, experience cannot begin to teach them till we are actually on the stage: whereas, by a previous application to this study, we conn them over at least, before we appear there: we are not quite unprepared, we learn our parts sooner, and we learn them better.

Let me explain what I mean by an example. There is fcarce any folly or vice more epidemical among the fons of men, than that ridiculous and hurtful vanity, by which the people of each country are apt to prefer themselves to those of every other; and to make their own customs, and manners.

ners, and opinions, the standards of right and wrong, of true and false. The Chinese mandarins were strangely surprised, and almost incredulous, when the Jesuits fhewed them how fmall a figure their empire made in the general map of the world. The Samojedes wondered much at the Czar of Muscovy for not living among them: and the Hottentot, who returned from Europe, stripped himself naked as foon as he came home, put on his bracelets of guts and garbage, and grew stinking and lowfy as fast as he could. Now nothing can contribute more to prevent us from being tainted with this vanity, than to accustom ourselves early to contemplate the different nations of the earth, in that vast map which history spreads before us, in their rife and their fall, in their barbarous and civilized states, in the likeness and unlikeness of them all to one another. and of each to itself. By frequently renewing this prospect to the mind, the Mexican with his cap and coat of feathers, facrificing a human victim to his god, will not appear more favage to our eyes, than the Spaniard with an hat on his head, and a gonilla round his neck, facrificing whole nations to his ambition, his avarice, and even the wantonness of his cruelty. I might

### Of the STUDY of HISTORY.

might shew, by a multitude of other examples, how history prepares us for experience, and guides us in it: and many of these would be both curious and important. I might likewise bring several other instances, wherein history serves to purge the mind of those national partialities and prejudices that we are apt to contract in our education, and that experience for the most part rather confirms than removes: because it is for the most part confined, like our education. But I apprehend growing too prolix, and shall therefore conclude this head by observing, that the an early and proper application to the study of history will contribute extremely to keep our minds free from a ridiculous partiality in favor of our own country, and a vicious prejudice against others; yet the same study will create in us a preference of affection to our own country. There is a story told of AB-GARUS. He brought feveral beafts taken in different places to Rome, they fay, and let them loose before Augustus: every beaft ran immediately to that part of the Circus; where a parcel of earth taken from his native foil had been laid. " Credat Judaeus Apella." This tale might pass on Josephus: for in him. I believe. I red it: but furely the love of our country is a lesson of reason. not

## 28 LETTER II.

not an inftitution of nature. Education and habit, obligation and interest, attach us to it, not instinct. It is however so necessary to be cultivated, and the prosperity of all focieties, as well as the grandeur of fome, depends upon it fo much, that orators by their eloquence, and poets by their enthusiasm, have endeavoured to work up this precept of morality into a principle of passion. But the examples which we find in history, improved by the lively defcriptions, and the just applauses or censures of historians, will have a much better and more permanent effect, than declamation, or fong, or the dry ethics of mere philosophy. In fine, to converse with historians is to keep good company: many of them were excellent men, and those who were not such, have taken care however to appear fuch in their writings. It must be therefore of great use to prepare ourselves by this conversation for that of the world; and to receive our first impressions, and to acquire our first habits, in a scene where images of virtue and vice are continually represented to us in the colors that belong properly to them, before we enter on another scene, where virtue and vice are too often confounded, and what belongs to one is ascribed to the other.

BE-

Besides the advantage of beginning our acquaintance with mankind fooner, and of bringing with us into the world, and the business of it, such a cast of thought and fuch a temper of mind, as will enable us to make a better use of our experience; there is this further advantage in the study of history, that the improvement we make by it extends to more objects, and is made at the expence of other men: whereas that improvement, which is the effect of our own experience, is confined to fewer objects, and is made at our own expence. To state the account fairly therefore between these two improvements; tho the latter be the more valuable, yet allowance being made on one fide for the much greater number of examples that history prefents to us, and deduction being made on the other of the price we often pay for our experience, the value of the former will rife in proportion. " I have recorded these " things," fays Polybius, after giving an account of the defeat of REGULUS, " that " they who read these commentaries may " be rendered better by them; for all men " have two ways of improvement, one a-" rifing from their own experience, and one " from the experience of others. Evi-" dentior quidem illa est, quae per propria

" ducit infortunia; at tutior illa, quae per " aliena." I use Casaubon's translation. Polybius goes on, and concludes, " that " fince the first of these ways exposes us to " great labour and peril, whilft the fecond " works the fame good effect, and is at-" tended by no evil circumstance, every " one ought to take for granted, that the " fludy of history is the best school where " he can learn how to conduct himself in " all the fituations of life." REGULUS had feen at Rome many examples of magnanimity, of frugality, of the contempt of riches, and of other virtues; and these virtues he practifed. But he had not learned, nor had opportunity of learning another lesson, which the examples recorded in history inculcate frequently, the lesson of moderation. infatiable thirst of military fame, an unconfined ambition of extending their empire, an extravagant confidence in their own courage and force, an infolent contempt of their enemies, and an impetuous over-bearing fpirit with which they purfued all their enterprizes, composed in his days the distinguishing character of a Roman. Whatever the fenate and people refolved to the members of that common-wealth, appeared both practicable and just. Neither difficulties nor dangers could check them; and their

### Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 37 fages had not yet discovered, that virtues in excess degenerate into vices. Notwithstanding the beautiful rant which HORACE puts into his mouth, I make no doubt that REGULUS learned at Carthage those lessons of moderation which he had not learned at Rome; but he learned them by experience, and the fruits of this experience came too late, and cost too dear; for they cost the total defeat of the Roman army, the prolongation of a calamitous war which might have been finished by a glorious peace, the loss of liberty to thousands of Roman citizens, and to REGULUS himself the loss of life in the midst of torments, if we are en-

tirely to credit what is perhaps exaggeration

in the Roman authors.

THERE is another advantage, worthy our observation, that belongs to the study of history; and that I shall mention here, not only because of the importance of it, but because it leads me immediately to speak of the nature of the improvement we ought to have in our view, and of the method in which it seems to me that this improvement ought to be pursued: two particulars from which your lordship may think perhaps that I digress too long. The advantage I mean consists in this, that the examples which history presents to us, both of men and

and of events, are generally complete: the whole example is before us, and confequently the whole lesson, or sometimes the various lessons, which philosophy proposes to teach us by this example. For first, as to men; we fee them at their whole length in history, and we see them generally there through a medium less partial at least than that of experience: for I imagine, that a whig or a tory, whilft those parties subsifted, would have condemned in Saturninus the spirit of faction which he applauded in his own tribunes, and would have applauded in Drusus the spirit of moderation which he despised in those of the contrary party, and which he suspected and hated in those of his own party. The villain who has imposed on mankind by his power or cunning, and whom experience could not unmask for a time, is unmasked at length: and the honest man, who has been misunderstood or defamed, is justified before his story ends. Or if this does not happen, if the villain dies with his mask on, in the midst of applause, and honor, and wealth, and power, and if the honest man dies under the fame load of calumny and difgrace under which he lived, driven perhaps into exile, and exposed to want; yet we see historical justice executed, the name of one branded.

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. branded with infamy, and that of the other celebrated with panegyric to fucceeding ages. " Praecipuum munus annalium reor, ne " virtutes fileantur; utque pravis dictis " factisque ex posteritate et infamia metus " fit." Thus, according to TACITUS, and according to truth, from which his judgments feldom deviate, the principal duty of history is to erect a tribunal, like that among the Egyptians, mentioned by Dio-DORUS SICULUS, where men and princes themselves were tried, and condemned or acquitted, after their deaths; where those who had not been punished for their crimes, and those who had not been honored for their virtues, received a just retribution. The fentence is pronounced in one case, as it was in the other, too late to correct or recompense; but it is pronounced in time to render these examples of general instruction to mankind. Thus CICERO, that I may quote one instance out of thousands, and that I may do justice to the general character of that great man, whose particular failing I have censured fo freely; CICERO, I fay, was abandoned by Octavius, and massacred by Anthony. But let any man read this fragment of ARELLIUS Fuscus, and chuse which he would wish to have been, the orator, or the triumvir? " Quoad humanum genus " in-

### 24 LETTER II.

"incolume manserit, quamdiu usus literis, 
honor summae eloquentiae pretium erit, 
quamdiu rerum natura aut fortuna steterit, aut memoria duraverit, admirabile 
posteris vigebis ingenium, et uno proferiptus seculo, proscribes Antonium

" omnibus."

Thus again, as to events that stand recorded in history; we see them all, we see them as they followed one another, or as they produced one another, causes or effects, immediate or remote. We are cast back, as it were, into former ages: we live with the men who lived before us, and we inhabit countries that we never faw. Place is enlarged, and time prolonged, in this manner; fo that the man who applies himfelf early to the study of history, may acquire in a few years, and before he fets his foot abroad in the world, not only a more extended knowledge of mankind, but the experience of more centuries than any of the patriarchs faw. The events we are witnesses of, in the course of the longest life, appear to us very often original, unprepared, fingle, and un-relative, if I may use such an expression for want of a better in English; in French I would fay isolés: they appear such very often, are called accidents, and looked on as the effects of chance; a word, by the

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 35

way, which is in conftant use, and has frequently no determinate meaning. We get over the present difficulty, we improve the momentary advantage, as well as we can, and we look no farther. Experience can carry us no farther; for experience can go a very little way back in discovering causes: and effects are not the objects of experience till they happen. From hence many errors in judgment, and by confequence in conduct, necessarily arise. And here too lyes the difference we are speaking of between history and experience. The advantage on the fide of the former is double. In antient history, as we have faid already, the examples are complete, which are incomplete in the courie of experience. The beginning, the progreffion, and the end appear, not of particular reigns, much less of particular enterprizes, or fystems of policy alone, but of governments, of nations, of empires, and of all the various fystems that have succeeded one another in the course of their duration. In modern history, the examples may be, and fometimes are, incomplete; but they have this advantage when they are fo, that they ferve to render complete the examples of our own time. Experience is doubly defective; we are born too late to fee the beginning, and we die too foon to fee the end

### 26 LETTER II.

end of many things. History supplies both these defects. Modern history shews the causes, when experience presents the effects alone: and ancient history enables us to guess at the effects, when experience presents the causes alone. Let me explain my meaning by two examples of these kinds; one past, the other actually present.

When the revolution of one thousand fix hundred and eighty-eight happened, few men then alive, I suppose, went farther in their fearch after the causes of it, than the extravagant attempt of king JAMES against the religion and liberty of his people. His former conduct, and the passages of king Charles the fecond's reign might rankle still at the hearts of some men, but could not be fet to account among the causes of his deposition; fince he had succeeded, notwithstanding them, peaceably to the throne: and the nation in general, even many of those who would have excluded him from it, were defirous, or at least, willing, that he should continue in it. Now this example, thus stated, affords, no doubt, much good instruction to the kings, and people of Britain. But this instruction is not entire, because the example thus stated, and confined to the experience of that age, is imperfect. King James's mal-administration

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. tion rendered a revolution necessary and practicable; but his mal-administration, as well as all his preceding conduct, was caused by his bigot-attachment to popery, and to the principles of arbitrary government, from which no warning could divert him. His bigot-attachment to these was caused by the exile of the royal family; this exile was caused by the usurpation of CROMWEL: and Cromwel's usurpation was the effect of a former rebellion, begun not without reason on account of liberty, but without any valid pretence on account of religion. During this exile, our princes caught the taint of popery and foreign politics. We made them unfit to govern us, and after that were forced to recal them that they might rescue us out of anarchy. It was necessary therefore, your lordship sees, at the revolution, and it is more fo now, to go back in history, at least as far as I have mentioned, and perhaps farther, even to the beginning of King James the first's reign, to render this event a complete example, and to develope all the wife, honest, and falutary precepts, with which it is pregnant, both to king and fubject.

The other example shall be taken from what has succeeded the revolution. Few C 3 men

men at that time looked forward enough, to foresee the necessary consequences of the new constitution of the revenue, that was foon afterwards formed; nor of the method of funding that immediately took place; which, abfurd as they are, have continued ever fince, till it is become scarce possible to alter them. Few people, I say, forefaw how the creation of funds, and the multiplication of taxes, would encrease yearly the power of the crown, and bring our liberties, by a natural and necessary progression, into more real, tho less apparent danger, than they were in before the The excessive ill husbandry revolution. practifed from the very beginning of king WILLIAM's reign, and which laid the foundations of all we feel and all we fear, was not the effect of ignorance, mistake, or what we call chance, but of defign and scheme in those who had the sway at that time. I am not so uncharitable, however, as to believe that they intended to bring upon their country all the mischiefs that we, who came after them, experience, and apprehend. No, they faw the meafures they took fingly, and unrelatively, or relatively alone to fome immediate object. The notion of attaching men to the new government, by tempting them to embark

bark their fortunes on the fame bottom. was a reason of state to some: the notion of creating a new, that is, a moneyed interest, in opposition to the landed interest or as a balance to it, and of acquiring a superior influence in the city of London at least by the establishment of great corporations, was a reason of party to others: and I make no doubt that the opportunity of amassing immense estates by the management of funds, by trafficking in paper, and by all the arts of jobbing, was a reason of private interest to those who supported and improved this scheme of iniquity, if not to those who devised it. They looked no farther. Nay, we who came after them, and have long tasted the bitter fruits of the corruption they planted, were far from taking fuch an alarm at our diffress, and our danger, as they deferved; till the most remote and fatal effect of causes, laid by the last generation, was very near becoming an object of experience in this. Your lordship, I am fure, fees at once how much a due reflection on the passages of former times, as they stand recorded in the history of our own, and of other countries, would have deterred a free people from trusting the fole management of fo great a revenue, and the fole nomination of those legions of officers C 4 employed

# 40 LETTER II.

employed in it, to their chief magistrate. There remained indeed no pretence for doing fo, when once a falary was fettled on the prince, and the public revenue was no longer in any fense his revenue, nor the public expence his expence. Give me leave to add, that it would have been, and would be still, more decent with regard to the prince, and less repugnant if not more conformable to the principles and practice too of our government, to take this power and influence from the prince, or to share it with him; than to exclude men from the privilege of reprefenting their fellow-fubjects who would chuse them in parliament, purely because they are employed and trufted by the prince.

Your lordship sees not only, how much a due reflection upon the experience of other ages and countries would have pointed out national corruption, as the natural and necessary consequence of investing the crown with the management of so great a revenue; but also the loss of liberty, as the natural and necessary consequence of national corruption.

THESE two examples explain fufficiently what they are intended to explain. It only remains therefore upon this head, to observe the difference between the two manners in which history supplies the defects of our own experience. It shews us causes as in fact they were laid, with their immediate effects: and it enables us to guess at future events. It can do no more, in the nature of things. My lord Bacon, in his fecond book of the Advancement of learning, having in his mind, I suppose, what PHILO and JOSEPHUS afferted of Moses, affirms divine history to have this prerogative, that the narration may be before the fact as well as after. But fince the ages of prophecy, as well as miracles, are past, we must content ourselves to guess at what will be, by what has been: we have no other means in our power, and history furnishes us with these. How we are to improve, and apply these means, as well as how we are to acquire them, shall be deduced more particularly in another letter.

The Property low appearance on to

Charles and Area and Area and when the content of the content of the only STATE OF THE SAME SAME REPORTED IN for the color of the second blood of the second second Anglier in the real of the telephone being a stable of depois of the the tides. where the standard stands should be so that the standard of the Laborator in the standard of t success of lately by the later out the error and the contract of the contract of the color, diet toe en fielen der Berten gener ele en fait et l'er en fait a and of proping ; sawed as ta a plant i se i di tunta en do clum su citta and he can be a topout and his sale the context micanes in contributions. State of the state of the state of and the second second second 15 A talastrile exam. Leophole 

# STUDY of HISTORY.

# LETTER III.

1. An objection against the utility of history removed. 2. The false and true aims of those who study it. 3. Of the history of the first ages, with respections on the state of ancient history prophane and sacred.

ERE these letters to fall into the hands of some ingenious persons who adorn the age we live in, your lordship's correspondent would be joked upon for his project of improving men in virtue and wisdom by the study of history. The general characters of men it would be said, are determined by their natural constitutions, as their particular actions are by immediate objects. Many very conversant in history would be cited, who have proved ill men, or bad politicians; and a long roll would be produced of others, who

### 44 LETTER III.

who have arrived at a great pitch of private, and public virtue, without any afficance of this kind. Something has been faid already to anticipate this objection; but, fince I have heard feveral persons affirm such propositions with great considence, a loud laugh, or a filent sneer at the pedants who presumed to think otherwise; I will spend a few paragraphs, with your lordship's leave, to shew that such affirmations, for to affirm amongst these sine men is to reason, either prove too much, or prove nothing.

Ir our general characters were determined absolutely, as they are certainly influenced, by our constitutions, and if our particular actions were fo by immediate objects; all instruction by precept, as well as example, and all endeavours to form the moral character by education, would be unnecessary. Even the little care that is taken, and furely it is impossible to take less, in the training up our youth, would be too much. But the truth is widely different from this representation of it; for, what is vice, and what is virtue? I fpeak of them in a large and philosophical sense. The former is, I think, no more than the excess, abuse, and misapplication of appetites,

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 45 petites, desires, and passions, natural and innocent, nay useful and necessary. The latter consists in the moderation and government, in the use and application of these appetites, desires, and passions, according to the rules of reason, and therefore, often in opposition to their own blind impulse.

WHAT now is education? that part, that principal and most neglected part of it, I mean, which tends to form the moral character? It is, I think, an institution designed to lead men from their tender years, by precept and example, by argument and authority, to the practice, and to the habit of practifing these rules. The stronger our appetites, defires, and paffions are, the harder indeed is the task of education: but when the efforts of education are proportioned to this strength, altho our keenest appetites and defires, and our ruling paffions cannot be reduced to a quiet and uniform fubmission, yet, are not their excesses asswaged? are not their abuses and misapplications, in some degree, diverted or checked? Tho the pilot cannot lay the ftorm, cannot he carry the ship, by his art, better through it, and often prevent the wreck that would always happen, without him?

### 46 LETTER III.

If ALEXANDER, who loved wine, and was naturally choleric, had been bred under the feverity of Roman discipline, it is probable he would neither have made a bonfire of Persepolis for his whore, nor have killed his friend. If Scipio, who was naturally given to women, for which anecdote we have, if I mistake not, the authority of Polybius, as well as some verses of NAEvius preserved by A. Gellius, had been educated by OLYMPIAS at the court of PHILIP, it is improbable that he would have restored the beautiful Spaniard. In short, if the renowned Socrates had not corrected nature by art, this first apostle of the gentiles had been a very profligate fellow, by his own confession; for he was inclined to all the vices Zopyrus imputed to him, as they fay, on the observation of his physiognomy.

WITH him therefore, who denies the effects of education, it would be in vain to dispute; and with him who admits them, there can be no dispute, concerning that share which I ascribe to the study of history, in forming our moral characters, and making us better men. The very persons who pretend that inclinations cannot be restrained, nor habits corrected, against our

### Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 47 natural bent, would be the first perhaps to prove, in certain cases, the contrary. A fortune at court, or the favors of a lady, have prevailed on many to conceal, and they could not conceal without restraining, which is one step towards correcting, the vices they were by nature addicted to the most. Shall we imagine now, that the beauty of virtue and the deformity of vice, the charms of a bright and lafting reputation, the terror of being delivered over as criminals to all posterity, the real benefit arifing from a conscientious discharge of the duty we owe to others, which benefit fortune can neither hinder nor take away, and the reasonableness of conforming ourfelves to the defigns of God manifested in the constitution of the human nature; shall we imagine, I fay, that all these are not . able to acquire the same power over those who are continually called upon to a contemplation of them, and they who apply themselves to the study of history are so called upon, as other motives, mean and fordid in comparison of these, can usurp

2. That the study of history, far from making us wifer, and more useful citizens, as well as better men, may be of no advantage

on other men?

vantage whatfoever; that it may ferve to render us mere antiquaries and scholars; or that it may help to make us forward coxcombs, and prating pedants, I have already allowed. But this is not the fault of hiftory: and to convince us that it is not, we need only contrast the true use of history with the use that is made of it by such men as these. We ought always to keep in mind, that history is philosophy teaching by examples how to conduct ourselves in all the fituations of private and public life; that therefore we must apply ourfelves to it in a philosophical spirit and manner; that we must rise from particular to general knowledge, and that we must fit ourselves for the society and business of mankind by accustoming our minds to reflect and meditate on the characters we find described, and the course of events we find related there. Particular examples may be of use sometimes in particular cases; but the application of them is dangerous. It must be done with the utmost circumfpection, or it will be feldom done with And yet one would think that fuccess. this was the principal use of the study of history, by what has been written on the Subject. I know not whether MACHIAVED himself is quite free from defect on this

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. account: he feems to carry the use and application of particular examples fometimes too far. Marius and Catulus passed the Alpes, met, and defeated the Cimbri beyond the frontiers of Italy. Is it fafe to conclude from hence, that whenever one people is invaded by another, the invaded ought to meet and fight the invaders at a distance from their frontiers? MACHIA-VEL'S countryman, Guicciardin, was aware of the danger that might arise from fuch an application of examples. Peter of Medicis had involved himself in great difficulties, when those wars and calamities began which Lewis SFORZA first drew and entailed on Italy, by flattering the ambition of CHARLES the eighth in order to gratify his own, and calling the French into that country. Peter owed his diffress to his folly in departing from the general tenor of conduct his father LAURENCE had held, and hoped to relieve himself by imitating his father's example in one particular instance. At a time when the wars with the pope and king of Naples had reduced Laurence to circumstances of great danger, he took the resolution of going to FERDINAND, and of treating in person with that prince. The resolution appears in history imprudent and almost desperate:

### · LETTER III.

were we informed of the fecret reasons on which this great man acted, it would appear very possibly a wife and fafe measure. It succeeded, and LAURENCE brought back with him public peace, and private fecurity. As foon as the French troops entered the dominions of Florence, Peter was struck with a panic terror, went to CHARLES the eighth, put the port of Leghorn, the fortresses of Pifa, and all the keys of the country, into this prince's hands; whereby he difarmed the Florentine commonwealth, and ruined himself. He was deprived of his authority, and driven out of the city, by the just indignation of the magistrates and people: and in the treaty which they made afterwards with the king of France, it was stipulated, that Peter should not remain within an hundred miles of the state, nor his brothers within the fame distance of the city of Florence. On this occasion Guicciar-DIN observes how dangerous it is to govern ourselves by particular examples; fince, to have the fame success, we must have the same prudence, and the same fortune; and fince the example must not only answer the case before us in general, but in every minute circumstance. This is the fense of that admirable historian, and these are his words-" é fenza dubio molto

" peri-

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. ec pericolofo il governarsi con gl' esempi, " fe non concorrono, non folo in generale, " ma in tutti i particulari, le medifime " ragioni; fe le cose non sono regolate con " la medesima prudenza, & se oltre a tutti " li altri fondamenti, non, v'ha la parte " fua la medefima fortuna." An observation that BOILEAU makes, and a rule he lays down in speaking of translations, will properly find their place here, and ferve to explain still better what I would establish. "To translate servilely into modern lan-" guage an ancient author phrase by phrase, " and word by word, is prepofterous: no-" thing can be more unlike the original " than fuch a copy. It is not to fhew, it " is to disguise the author: and he who " has known him only in this drefs, would " not know him in his own. A good " writer, instead of taking this inglorious " and unprofitable talk upon him, will " jouster contre l'original, rather imitate " than translate, and rather emulate than imi-" tate: he will transfuse the sense and spirit " of the original into his own work, and will " endeavour to write as the ancient author " would have wrote, had he writ in the " fame language." Now, to improve by examples is to improve by imitation. We must catch the spirit, if we can, and con-D 2

form ourselves to the reason of them; but we must not affect to translate servilely into our conduct, if your lordship will allow me the expression, the particular conduct of those good and great men, whose images history fets before us. Codrus and the Decii devoted themselves to death: one, because an oracle had foretold that the army whose general was killed would be victorious; the others in compliance with a fuperstition that bore great analogy to a ceremony practifed in the old Egyptian church, and added afterwards, as many others of the same origin were, to the ritual of the Ifraelites. These are examples of great magnanimity, to be fure, and of magnanimity employed in the most worthy In the early days of the Athenian and Roman government, when the credit of oracles and all kinds of superstition prevailed, when heaven was piously thought to delight in blood and even human blood was fhed under wild notions of atonement, propitiation, purgation, expiation, and fatisfaction; they who fet fuch examples as thefe, acted an heroical and a rational part too. But if a general should act the same part now, and, in order to fecure his victory, get killed as fast as he could; he might pass for an hero, but, I am fure, he would pass for a

mad-

of the Study of History. 53 madman. Even these examples, however, are of use: they excite us at least to venture our lives freely in the service of our country, by proposing to our imitation men who devoted themselves to certain death in the service of theirs. They shew us what a turn of imagination can operate, and how the greatest trisse, nay the greatest absurdity, dressed up in the solemn airs of religion, can carry ardor and considence, or the contrary sentiments, into the breasts of thousands.

THERE are certain general principles, and rules of life and conduct, which always must be true, because they are conformable to the invariable nature of things. He who studies history as he would study philosophy, will soon distinguish and collect them, and by doing fo will foon form to himself a general system of ethics and politics on the furest foundations, on the trial of these principles and rules in all ages, and on the confirmation of them by universal experience. I faid he will diftinguish them; for once more I must say, that as to particular modes of actions, and measures of conduct, which the customs of different countries, the manners of different ages, and the circumftances of different conjuncture, have appropriated, as it were; it 15

is always ridiculous, or imprudent and dangerous to employ them. But this is not all. By contemplating the vast variety of particular characters and events; by examining the strange combinations of causes, different, remote and feemingly opposite, that often concur in producing one effect; and the furprifing fertility of one fingle and uniform cause in the producing of a multitude of effects as different, as remote, and feemingly as opposite; by tracing carefully, as carefully as if the subject he considers were of personal and immediate concern to him, all the minute and fometimes scarceperceivable circumstances, either in the characters of actors, or in the course of actions, that history enables him to trace, and according to which the fuccess of affairs, even the greatest, is mostly determined; by thefe, and fuch methods as thefe, for I might descend into a much greater detail, a man of parts may improve the fludy of history to it's proper and principal use; he may sharpen the penetration, fix the attention of his mind, and strengthen his judgment; he may acquire the faculty and the habit of difcerning quicker, and looking farther; and of exerting that flexibility, and steadiness, which are necessary to be joined in the conduct of all affairs that depend Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 55 depend on the concurrence or opposition of other men.

Mr. Locke, I think, recommends the study of geometry even to those who have no design of being geometricians: and he gives a reason for it, that may be applied to the present case. Such persons may forget every problem that has been proposed, and every solution that they or others have given; but the habit of pursuing long trains of ideas will remain with them, and they will appear through the mazes of sophism, and discover a latent truth, where persons who have not this habit will never find it.

In this manner, the study of history will prepare us for action and observation. History is the ancient author: experience is the modern language. We form our taste on the first; we translate the sense and reason, we transfuse the spirit and force; but we imitate only the particular graces of the original: we imitate them according to the idiom of our own tongue, that is, we substitute often equivalents in the lieu of them, and are far from affecting to copy them servicely. To conclude, as experience is conversant about the present, and the present D 4

# 6 LETTER III.

enables us to guess at the future; so history is conversant about the past, and by knowing the things that have been, we become better able to judge of the things that are.

This use, my lord, which I make the proper and principal use of the study of hithory, is not infifted on by those who have writ concerning the method to be followed in this fludy: and fince we propose different ends, we must of course take different ways. Few of their treatifes have fallen into my hands: one, the method of Bodin, a man famous in his time, I remember to have red. I took it up with much expectation many years ago; I went through it, and remained extremely disappointed. He might have given almost any other title to his book as properly as that which stands before it. There are not many pages in it that relate any more to his subject than a tedious fifth chapter, wherein he accounts for the characters of nations according to their politions on the globe, and according to the influence of the stars; and affures his reader that nothing can be more neceffary than fuch a disquisition, " ad univer-" fam historiarum cognitionem, et incor-" ruptum earum judicium." In his method.

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 57 thod, we are to take first a general view of universal history, and chronology, in short abstracts, and then to study all particular histories and systems. SENECA fpeaks of men who fpend their whole lives in learning how to act in life, "dum vitae " instrumenta conquirunt." I doubt that this method of Bodin would conduct us in the fame, or as bad a way; would leave us no time for action, or would make us unfit for it. A huge common-place book, wherein all the remarkable fayings and facts that we find in history are to be registered, may enable a man to talk or write like Bodin, but will never make him a better man, nor enable him to promote, like an useful citizen, the security, the peace, the welfare, or the grandeur of the community to which he belongs. I shall proceed therefore to speak of a method that leads to fuch purposes as these directly and certainly, without any regard to the methods that have been prescribed by others.

I THINK then we must be on our guard against this very affectation of learning, and this very wantonness of curiosity, which the examples and precepts we commonly meet with are calculated to flatter and indulge.

# 58 LETTER HI.

dulge. We must neither dwell too long in the dark, nor wander about till we lose our way in the light. We are too apt to carry fystems of philosophy beyond all our ideas, and fystems of history beyond all our memorials. The philosopher begins with reason, and ends with imagination. The historian inverts this order: he begins without memorials and he fometimes ends with them. This filly custom is so prevalent among men of letters who apply themselves to the study of history, and has fo much prejudice and fo much authority on the fide of it, that your lordship must give me leave to speak a little more particularly and plainly than I have done, in fayour of common fenfe, against an absurdity which is almost fanctified.

### REFLECTIONS

On the state of ancient HISTORY.

THE nature of man, and the constant course of human affairs, render it impossible that the first ages of any new nation which forms itself, should afford authentic materials for history. We have none such concerning the originals of any of those nations that actually fubfift. Shall we expect to find them concerning the originals of nations dispersed, or extinguished, two or three thousand years ago? If a thread of dark and uncertain traditions, therefore, is made, as it commonly is, the introduction to history, we should touch it lightly, and run swiftly over it, far from insisting on it, either as authors or readers. Such introductions are at best no more than fanciful preludes, that try the instruments, and precede the concert. He must be void of judgment, and taste, one would think, who can take the first for true history, or the last for true harmony. And yet so it has been, and so it is, not in Germany and Holland alone; but in Italy, in France, and in England, where genius has abounded, and taste has been long refined. Our great fcholars have dealt and deal in fables at least

as much as our poets, with this difference to the disadvantage of the former, to whom I may apply the remark as justly as Seneca applyed it to the dialecticians-" triffius " inepti funt. Illi ex professo lasciviunt; " hi agere seipsos aliquid existimant." Learned men, in learned and inquisitive ages, who possessed many advantages that we have not, and among others that of being placed fo many centuries nearer the original truths that are the objects of fo much laborious fearch, despaired of finding them, and gave fair warning to posterity, if posterity would have taken it. ancient geographers, as Plutarch fays in the life of THESEUS, when they laid down in their maps the little extent of fea and land that was known to them, left great spaces void. In some of these spaces they wrote, Here are fandy defarts; in others, Here are impassable marshes, Here is a chain of inhospitable mountains, or Here is a frozen Just fo, both he and other historians, when they related fabulous originals, were not wanting to fet out the bounds beyond which there was neither history nor chronology. Censorinus has preferved the distinction of three aeras established by VARRO. This learned Roman antiquary did not determine whether the first period

### Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 61

had any beginning, but fixed the end of it at the first, that is, according to him, the Ogygian, deluge; which he placed, I think, fome centuries backwarder than Julius Africanus thought fit to place it afterwards. To this aera of absolute darkness he supposed that a kind of twilight succeeded, from the Ogygian deluge to the Olympic aera, and this he called the fabulous age. From this vulgar aera when CORAE-Bus was crowned victor, and long after the true aera when these games were instituted by IPHITUS, the Greeks pretend to be able to digest their history with some order, clearnels, and certainty: VARRO therefore looked on it as the break of day, or the beginning of the historical age. He might do fo the rather, perhaps, because he included by it the date he likewise fixed, or, upon recollection, that the elder CATO had fixed. of the foundation of Rome within the period from which he supposed that historical truth was to be found. But yet most certain it is, that the history and chronology of the ages that follow are as confused and uncertain, as the history and chronology of those which immediately precede this aera.

# 62 LETTER III.

### 1. The state of ancient profane history.

THE Greeks did not begin to write in prose till Pherecides of Syros introduced the custom: and CADMUS MILESIUS was their first historian. Now these men flourished long after the true, or even the vulgar Olympic aera; for Josephus affirms, and in this he has great probability on his fide, that CADMUS MILESIUS, and Acusi-LAUS ARGIVUS, in a word the oldest historians in Greece, were very little more ancient than the expedition of the Persians against the Greeks. As several centuries passed between the Olympic aera and these first historians, there passed likewise several more between these and the first Greek chronologers. Timoeus about the time of Pro-LOMY PHILADELPHUS, and ERATOSTHENES about that of PTOLOMY EVERGETES, feem first to have digested the events recorded by them, according to the olympiads. Precedent writers mentioned fometimes the olympiads; but this rule of reckoning was not brought into established use sooner. The rule could not ferve to render history more clear and certain till it was followed: it was not followed till about five hundred years after

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 63 after the Olympic aera. There remains therefore no pretence to place the beginning of the historical age so high as VARRO placed it, by sive hundred years.

HELLANICUS indeed and others pretended to give the originals of cities and governments, and to deduce their narrations from great antiquity. Their works are loft, but we can judge how inconfiderable the loss is, by the writings of that age which remain, and by the report of those who had feen the others. For instance, HERODO-TUS was cotemporary with Hellanicus. Herodotus was inquisitive enough in all conscience, and proposed to publish all he could learn of the antiquities of the Ionians, Lydians, Phrygians, Egyptians, Babylonians, Medes, and Perfians; that is, of almost all the nations who were known in his time to exist. If he wrote Affyriacs, we have them not; but we are fure that this word was used proverbially to fignify fabulous legends, foon after his time, and when the mode of publishing fuch relations and histories prevailed among the Greeks.

In the nine books we have, he goes back, indeed almost to the Olympic aera, without

### 64 LETTER III.

out taking notice of it however; but he goes back only to tell an old woman's tale, of a king who loft his crown for shewing his wife naked to his favourite; and from Candaules and Gyges he hastens, or rather he takes a great leap, down to Cyrus.

Something like a thread of history of the Medes and then of the Persians, to the flight of XERXES, which happened in his own time, is carried on. The events of his own time are related with an air of history. But all accounts of the Greeks as well as the Persians, which precede these, and all the accounts which he gives occasionally of other nations, were drawn up most manifeftly on broken, perplexed, and doubtful fcraps of tradition. He had neither original records, nor any authentic memorials to guide him, and yet these are the sole foundations of true history. HERODOTUS flourished, I think, little more than half a century, and Xenophon little more than a whole century, after the death of Cyrus: and yet how various and repugnant are the relations made by these two historians, of the birth, life, and death of this prince? If most histories had come down from these ages to ours, the uncertainty and inutility of

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 65 of them all would be but the more manifest. We should find that Acusilaus rejected the traditions of HESIOD, that HELLANIcus contradicted Acusilaus, that Ephorus accused Hellanicus, that Timaeus accufed EPHORUS, and all posterior writers TI-MAEUS. This is the report of Josephus. But, in order to shew the ignorance and falshood of all those writers through whom the traditions of profane antiquity came to the Greeks, I will quote to your lordship a much better authority than that of Jo-SEPHUS; the authority of one who had no prejudice to bias him, no particular cause to defend, nor system of ancient history to establish, and all the helps, as well as talents, necessary to make him a competent judge. The man I mean is STRABO.

SPEAKING of the Massagetae in his eleventh book, he writes to this effect: that no author had given a true account of them, tho several had writ of the war that Cyrus waged against them; and that historians had found as little credit in what they had related concerning the affairs of the Persians, Medes, and Syrians: that this was due to their folly; for observing that those who wrote fables professedly were held in esteem, these men imagined they should render their E writings

writings more agreeable, if, under the appearance and pretence of true history, they related what they had neither feen nor heard from persons able to give them true information; and that accordingly their only aim had been to dress up pleasing and marvellous relations: that one may better give credit to Hesion and Homer, when they talk of their heroes, nav even to dramatic poets, than to CTESIAS, HERODOTUS, HELLANICUS, and their followers: that it is not fafe to give credit even to the greatest part of the historians who writ concerning ALEXANDER; fince they too, encouraged by the greater reputation of this conqueror, by the distance to which he carried his arms, and by the difficulty of disproving what they faid of actions performed in regions fo remote, were apt to deceive: that indeed when the Roman empire on one fide, and the Parthian on the other, came to extend themselves, the truth of things grew to be better known.

You fee, my lord, not only how late profane history began to be writ by the Greeks, but how much later it began to be writ with any regard to truth; and confequently what wretched materials the learned men, who arose after the age of ALEX-

## Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 67

ALEXANDER, had to employ, when they attempted to form fystems of ancient history and chronology. We have fome remains of that laborious compiler Diodorus Sicu-Lus, but do we find in him any thread of ancient history, I mean, that which passed for ancient in his time? What complaints, on the contrary, does he not make of former historians? how frankly does he confels the little and uncertain light he had to follow in his refearches? Yet Dioporus, as well as Plutarch, and others, had not only the older Greek historians, but the more modern antiquaries, who pretended to have fearched into the records and registers of nations; even at that time renowned for their antiquity. Berosus, for instance, and Manetho, one a Babylonian and the other an Egyptian priest, had published the antiquities of their countries in the time of the PTOLEMYS. BEROSUS pretended to give the history of four hundred and eighty years. PLINY, if I remember right, for I fay this on memory, speaks to this effect in the fixth book of his Natural History: and if it was fo, these years were probably years of NABONASSAR. MANETHO began his history, God knows when, from the progress of Isis, or fome other as well ascertained period. He followed the Egyptian tradi-E 2 tions

tions of dynasties of Gods and Demi-Gods: and derived his anecdotes from the first MERCURY, who had infcribed them in facred characters, on antediluvian pillars, antediluvian at least according to our received chronology, from which the fecond Mercury had transcribed them, and inserted them into his works. We have not thefe antiquities; for the monk of VITERBO was foon detected: and if we had them, they would either add to our uncertainty, and encrease the chaos of learning, or tell us nothing worth our knowledge. For thus I reason. Had they given particular and historical accounts conformable to the scriptures of the Jews, Josephus, Julius Africanus, and Eusebius would have made quite other extracts from their writings, and would have altered and contradicted them lefs. The accounts they gave, therefore, were repugnant to facred writ, or they were defective: they would have established pyrrhonism, or have baulked our curiofity.

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 69

### 2. Of facred history.

WHAT memorials therefore remain to give us light into the originals of ancient nations, and the history of those ages, we commonly call the first ages? The Bible, it will be faid; that is, the historical part of it in the Old Testament. But, my lord, even these divine books must be reputed infufficient to the purpose, by every candid and impartial man who confiders either their authority as histories, or the matter they contain. For what are they? and how came they to us? At the time when ALEXANDER carried his arms into Afia, a people of Syria, till then unknown, became known to the Greeks: this people had been flaves to the Egyptians, Affyrians, Medes, and Persians, as these several empires prevailed: ten parts in twelve of them had been transplanted by ancient conquerors, and melted down and loft in the eaft, feveral ages before the establishment of the empire that ALEXANDER destroyed: the other two parts had been carried captive to Babylon a little before the same aera. This captivity was not indeed perpetual, like the other; but it lasted so long, and such cir-E 3 cumcumstances, whatever they were, accompanied it; that the captives forgot their country, and even their language, the Hebrew dialect at least and character: and a few of them only could be wrought upon, by the zeal of some particular men, to return home, when the indulgence of the Persian monarchs gave them leave to rebuild their city and to repeople their ancient patrimony. Even this remnant of the nation did not continue long entire. Another great transmigration followed; and the Jews, that fettled under the protection of the PTOLEMYS, forgot their language in Egypt, as the forefathers of these lews had forgot theirs in Chaldea. More attached however to their religion in Egypt, for reasons easy to be deduced from the new institutions that prevailed after the captivity among them, than their ancestors had been in Chaldea, a version of their facred writings was made into Greek at Alexandria, not long after the canon of these scriptures had been finished at Jerusalem; for many years could not intervene between the death of Simon the just, by whom this canon was finished, if he died during the reign of PTOLEMY SOTER, and the beginning of this famous translation under PTOLEMY PHILADELPHUS. The Hellenist Jews reported

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 71 ported as many marvellous things to authorize, and even to fanctify this translation, as the other Jews had reported about Es-DRAS who began, and Simon the just who finished, the canon of their scriptures. These holy romances slid into tradition, and tradition became history: the fathers of our christian church did not disdain to employ them. St. JEROME, for instance, laughed at the story of the seventy-two elders, whose translations were found to be, upon comparison, word for word the same, tho made separately, and by men who had no communication with one another. But the fame St. JEROME, in the fame place, quotes Aristeas, one of the guard of PTOLEMY PHILADELPHUS, as a real perfonage.

The account pretended to be writ by this Aristeas, of all that passed relating to the translation, was enough for his purpose. This he retained, and he rejected only the more improbable circumstances, which had been added to the tale, and which laid it open to most suspicion. In this he shewed great prudence, and better judgment, than that zealous, but weak apologist Justin, who believed the whole story himself, and endeavoured to impose it on mankind.

E 4 TH

Thus you fee, my lord, that when we confider these books barely as histories, delivered to us on the faith of a superstitious people, among whom the custom and art of pious lying prevailed remarkably, we may be allowed to doubt whether great. er credit is to be given to what they tell us concerning the original, compiled in their own country and as it were out of the fight of the rest of the world; than we know, with fuch a certainty as no scholar presumes to deny, that we ought to give to what they tell us concerning the copy?

THE Hellenist Jews were extremely pleased, no doubt, to have their scriptures in a language they understood, and that might spread the fame of their antiquity, and do honor to their nation, among their masters the Greeks. But yet we do not find that the authority of these books prevailed, or that even they were much known among the Pagan world. The reafon of this cannot be, that the Greeks admired nothing that was not of their own growth, "fua tantum mirantur:" for, on the contrary, they were inquisitive and credulous in the highest degree, and they collected and published at least as many idle traditions of other nations, as they propagated

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 73 gated of their own. Josephus pretended that THEOPOMPUS, a disciple of ISOCRATES, being about to infert in his hiftory fome things he had taken out of holy writ, the poor man became troubled in mind for feveral days; and that having prayed to Gop, during an intermission of his illness, to reveal to him the cause of it, he learned in his fleep that this attempt was the cause: upon which he quitted the defign and was cured. If Josephus had been a little more confistent than he is very often, such a story as this would not have been told by one, who was fond, as Jews and Christians in general have been, to create an opinion that the Gentiles took not their history alone, but their philosophy and all their valuable knowledge, from the Jews. Notwithstanding this story therefore, which is told in the fifteenth book of the Jewish Antiquities, and means nothing, or means to shew that the divine Providence would not fuffer anecdotes of facred to be mingled with profane history; the practice of Jose-PHUS himself, and of all those who have had the fame defign in view, has been to confirm the former by the latter, and at any rate to suppose an appearance at least of conformity between them. We are told HECATAEUS ABDERITA, for there

were

They might have copied Moses, and fo they did CTESIAS. But even this was not

<sup>\*</sup> Μωσω, γυνη Εδραία· ης εςι σύγγραμμα ὁ σαρ Εδραίοις νομω· ως φησιν Αλέξανδρω ὁ Μιλησιω ὁ Πολυίς ωρ. Sui. Lex. tom. ii. p. 583.

<sup>&#</sup>x27;Αλέξανδρω ... δ'ς Πολυίζωρ ... συνέγραψε βιδλία ἀρίθμε χρείτω. χ' περί 'Ρώμης βιδλία πέντε. ἐν τούτοις λέγει, 
ως γυνη γέγονεν Έδραία Μωσώ, ης ἐςι σύγβραμμα ο παρ 
Έδραίος νομος. Id. tom. i. p. 105. Edit. Cantab. 1725.

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 75

the case: whatever use a particular writer here and there might make occasionally of the scriptures, certain it is that the Jews continued to be as much despised, and their history to be as generally neglected, nay almost as generally unknown, for a long time at least after the version was made at Alexandria, as they had been before. Apion, an Egyptian, a man of much erudition, appeared in the world fome centuries afterwards. He wrote, among other antiquities, those of his own country: and as he was obliged to speak very often of the Jews, he spoke of them in a manner neither much to their honor, nor to that of their hiftories. He wrote purposely against them: and Josephus attempted afterwards, but APION was then dead, to refute him. Apion passed, I know, for a vain and noify pedant; but he passed likewise for a curious, a laborious, and a learned antiquary. If he was cabaliftical or superstitious, Josephus was at least as much so as he: and if he flattered Califula, Jose-PHUS introduced himself to the court of NERO and the favour of POPPAEA, by no very honorable means, under the protection of ALITURUS, a player, and a Jew; to fay nothing of his applying to VESPASIAN the prophecies concerning the Messiah,

#### 76 LETTER III.

nor of his accompanying. Tirus to the fiege of Jerusalem.

In short, my lord, the Jewish history never obtained any credit in the world, till christianity was established. The foundations of this system being laid partly in these histories, and in the prophecies joined to them or inferted in them, christianity has reflected back upon them an authority which they had not before, and this authority has prevailed wherever christianity has spred. Both Tews and Christians hold the same books in great veneration, whilft each condemns the other for not understanding, or for abusing them. But I apprehend that the zeal of both has done much hurt, by endeavouring to extend their authority much farther than is necessary for the support perhaps of Judaism, but to be sure of christianity. I explain myself that I may offend no pious ear.

Simon, in the preface to his Critical history of the Old testament, cites a divine of the faculty of Paris, who held that the infpirations of the authors of those books, which the church receives as the word of God, should be extended no farther than to matters purely of doctrine, or to such

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. as have a near and necessary relation to these; and that whenever these authors writ on other subjects, such as Egyptian, Affyrian, or other history, they had no more of the divine affiftance than any other persons of piety. This notion of inspirations that came occasionally, that illuminated the minds and guided the hands of the facred penmen while they were writing one page, and reftrained their influence while the fame authors were writing another, may be cavilled against: and what is there that may not? But furely it deferves to be treated with respect, since it tends to establish a distinction between the legal. doctrinal, or prophetical parts of the Bible. and the historical: without which distinction it is impossible to establish the first, as evidently and as folidly as the interests of religion require: at least it appears impossible to me, after having examined and confidered, as well as I am able, all the trials of this kind that have been made by fubtile as well as tearned men. The Old is faid to be the foundation of the New, and fo it is in one fense: the system of religion contained in the latter refers to the system of religion contained in the former, and fupposes the truth of it. But the authority on which we receive the books of the New testament,

ment, is fo far from being founded on the authority of the Old testament, that it is quite independent on it; the New being proved, gives authority to the Old, but borrows none from it; and gives this authority to the particular parts only. CHRIST came to fulfill the prophecies; but not to confecrate all the written, any more than the oral, traditions of the Jews. We must believe these traditions as far as they relate to christianity, as far as christianity refers to them, or supposes them necessary; but we can be under no obligation to believe them any farther, fince without christianity we should be under no obligation to believe them at all.

IT has been faid by ABBADIE, and others, "That the accidents which have happened to alter the texts of the Bible, and to disfigure, if I may fay so, the freiptures in many respects, could not have been prevented without a perpetual flanding miracle, and that a perpetual flanding miracle is not in the order of providence." Now I can by no means subscribe to this opinion. It seems evident to my reason that the very contrary must be true; if we suppose that God acts towards men according to the moral sitness

#### Of the STUDY of HISTORY. of things: and if we suppose that he acts arbitrarily, we can form no opinion at all. I think that these accidents would not have happened, or that the scriptures would have been preserved entirely in their genuine purity notwithstanding these accidents, if they had been entirely dictated by the Holy GHOST: and the proof of this probable proposition, according to our clearest and most distinct ideas of wisdom and moral fitness. is obvious and eafy. But these scriptures are not fo come down to us: they are come down broken and confused, full of additions. interpolations, and transpositions, made we neither know when, nor by whom; and fuch, in short, as never appeared on the face of any other book, on whose authority men have agreed to rely.

This being so, my lord, what hypothesis shall we follow? Shall we adhere to some such distinction as I have mentioned? Shall we say, for instance, that the scriptures were written originally by the authors to whom they are vulgarly ascribed, but that these authors writ nothing by inspiration, except the legal, the doctrinal, and the prophetical parts, and that in every other respect their authority is purely human, and therefore fallible? Or shall we say that

these histories are nothing more than compilations of old traditions, and abridgments of old records, made in later times, as they appear to every one who reads them without prepoffession, and with attention? Shall we add, that which ever of these probabilities be true, we may believe, confiftently with either, notwithstanding the decision of any divines, who know no more than you or I, or any other man, of the order of providence, that all those parts and paffages of the Old testament, which contain prophecies, or matters of law or doctrine, and which were from the first of such importance in the defigns of providence to all future generations, and even to the whole race of mankind, have been from the first the peculiar care of providence? Shall we infift that fuch particular parts and passages, which are plainly marked out and fufficiently confirmed by the fystem of the Christian revelation, and by the completion of the prophecies, have been preserved from corruption by ways impenetrable to us, amidst all the changes and chances to which the books wherein they are recorded have been exposed; and that neither original writers, nor later compilers, have been suffered to make any effential alterations, fuch as would have falfified the law of Gop and

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 8

the principles of the Jewish and Christian religions, in any of these divine fundamental truths? Upon such hypotheses, we may affert without scruple, that the genealogies and histories of the Old testament are in no respect sufficient foundations for a chronology from the beginning of time, nor for universal history. But then the same hypotheses will secure the infallibility of scripture authority as far as religion is concerned. Faith and reason may be reconciled a little better than they commonly are. I may deny that the Old testament is transmitted to us under all the conditions of an authentic history, and yet be at liberty to maintain that the passages in it which establish original sin, which seem favorable to the doctrine of the Trinity, which foretell the coming of the Messiah, and all others of fimilar kind, are come down to us as they were originally dictated by the HOLY GHOST.

In attributing the whole credibility of the Old testament to the authority of the New, and in limiting the authenticity of the Jewish scriptures to those parts alone that concern law, doctrine, and prophecy, by which their chronology and the far greatest part of their history are excluded, I will venture to assure your lordship that I do not assume F.

fo much, as is affumed in every hypothefis that affixes the divine feal of inspiration to the whole, canon; that rests the whole proof on Jewish veracity; and that pretends to account particularly and positively for the descent of these antient writings in their present state.

Another reason, for which I have infifted the rather on the distinction so often mentioned, is this. I think we may find very good foundation for it even in the Bible: and tho this be a point very little attended to, and much disguised, it would not be hard to shew, upon great inducements of probability, that the law and the history were far from being blended together as they now stand in the Pentateuch, even from the time of Moses down to that of Esdras. But the principal and decifive reason for separating in such manner the legal, doctrinal, and prophetical parts, from the historical, is the necessity of having some rule to go by: and, I protest, I know of none that is yet agreed upon. I content myfelf therefore to fix my opinion concerning the authority of the Old testament in this manner, and carry it thus far only. We must do so, or we must enter into that labyrinth of dispute and contradiction, wherein even the most orthodox Jews and Christians

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY.

Christians have wandered fo many ages, and still wander. It is strange, but it is true; not only the Jews differ from the Chriftians, but Jews and Christians both differ among themselves, concerning almost every point that is necessary to be certainly known and agreed upon, in order to establish the authority of books which both have received already as authentic and fa-So that whoever takes the pains to read what learned men have writ on this fubject, will find that they leave the matter as doubtful as they took it up. Who were the authors of these scriptures, when they were published, how they were composed and preserved, or renewed, to use a remarkable expression of the famous Huer in his Demonstration; in fine, how they were loft during the captivity, and how they were retrieved after it, are all matters of controverly to this day.

It would be eafy for me to descend into a greater detail, and to convince your lordship of what I have been saying in general by an induction of particulars, even without any other help than that of a few notes which I took when I applied myself to this examination, and which now lye before me. But such a digression would carry me too far: and I fear that you will

think I have faid already more than enough upon this part of my subject. I go on therefore to observe to your lordship, that if the history of the Old testament was as exact and authentic, as the ignorance and impudence of some Rabbies have made them affert that it is: if we could believe with them that Moses wrote every fyllable in the Pentateuch as it now stands, or that all the pfalms were written by David: nay, if we could believe, with Philo and Jose-PHUS, that Moses wrote the account of his own death and fepulture, and made a fort of a funeral panegyric on himself, as we find them in the last chapter of Deuteronomy; yet still would I venture to affert, that he who expects to find a system of chronology, or a thread of history, or fufficient materials for either, in the books of the Old testament, expects to find what the authors of these books, whoever they were, never intended. They are extracts of genealogies, not genealogies; extracts of histories, not histories. The Jews themselves allow their genealogies to be very imperfect, and produce examples of omissions and errors in them, which denote fufficiently that these genealogies are extracts, wherein every generation in the course of descent is not mentioned. I have red somewhere, perhaps in the works of St. JEROME, that

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 85 that this father justifies the opinion of those who think it impossible to fix any certain chronology on that of the Bible: and this opinion will be justified still better, to the understanding of every man that considers how grofly the Jews blunder whenever they meddle with chronology; for this plain reafon, because their scriptures are imperfect in this respect, and because they rely on their oral, to rectify and supply their written, traditions: that is, they rely on traditions compiled long after the canon of their scriptures, but deemed by them of equal antiquity and authority. Thus, for instance, Daniel and Simon the just, according to them, were members at the fame time of the great fynagogue which began and finished the canon of the Old testament, under the presidency of Esdras. This Es-DRAS was the prophet MALACHI. the fon of Hystaspes was Artaxerxes LONGIMANUS; he was AHASUERUS, and he was the fame DARIUS whom ALEXANDER conquered. This may ferve as a fample of Jewish chronology, formed on their scriptures which afford infufficient lights, and on their traditions which afford false lights. We are indeed more correct, and come nearer to the truth in these instances, perhaps in some others, because we make use of profane chronology to help us. But F 3

profane chronology is itself so modern, so precarious, that this help does not reach to the greatest part of that time to which sacred chronology extends; that when it begins to help, it begins to perplex us too; and finally, that even with this help we should not have had so much as the appearance of a complete chronological fystem, and the same may be said of universal history, if learned men had not proceeded very wifely, on one uniform maxim, from the first ages of christianity, when a custom of fanctifying prophane learning, as well as prophane rites, which the Jews had imprudently laid afide, was taken up by the Christians. The maxim I mean is this, that prophane authority be admitted without scruple or doubt, whenever it says, or whenever it can be made to fay, if not "to-" tidem verbis," yet "totidem fyllabis," or " totidem literis" at least, or whenever it can be made by any interpretation to mean, what confirms, or supplies in a consistent manner, the holy writ; and that the fame authority be rejected, when nothing of this kind can be done, but the contradiction or inconfiftency remains irreconcileable. Such a liberty as this would not be allowed in any other case; because it supposes the very thing that is to be proved. But we fee it taken, very properly to be fure, in favor of facred Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 87 and infallible writings, when they are compared with others.

. In order to perceive with the utmost evidence, that the scope and design of the author or authors of the Pentateuch, and of the other books of the Old testament, answer as little the purpose of antiquaries, in history, as in chronology, it will be fufficient briefly to call to mind the fum of what they relate, from the creation of the world to the establishment of the Persian empire. If the antediluvian world continued one thousand fix hundred and fifty-fix years, and if the vocation of ABRAHAM is to be placed four hundred and twenty-fix years below the deluge, these twenty centuries make almost two thirds of the period mentioned: and the whole history of them is comprized in eleven short chapters of Genesis; which is certainly the most compendious extract that ever was made. If we examine the contents of these chapters, do we find any thing like an univerfal hiftory, or fo much as an abridgment of it? ADAM and EVE were created, they broke the commandment of God, they were driven out of the garden of Eden, one of their fons killed his brother, but their race foon multiplied and peopled the earth. What geography now have we, what history of this antediluvian world?

world? Why, none. The fons of God, it is faid, lay with the daughters of men, and begot giants, and GoD drowned all the inhabitants of the earth, except one family. After this we read that the earth was repeopled; but these children of one family were divided into feveral languages, even whilst they lived together, spoke the same language, and were employed in the fame work. Out of one of the countries into which they dispersed themselves, Chaldea, God called ABRAHAM fome time afterwards, with magnificent promises, and conducted him to a country called Chanaan. Did this author, my lord, intend an universal history? Certainly not. The tenth chapter of Genefis names indeed fome of the generations descending from the sons of Noah, some of the cities founded, and some of the countries planted by them. But what are bare names, naked of circumstances, without descriptions of countries, or relations of events? They furnish matter only for guess and dispute; and even the similitude of them, which is often used as a clue to lead us to the discovery of historical truth, has notoriously contributed to propagate error, and to encrease the perplexity of ancient tradition. These imperfect and dark accounts have not furnished matter for guess and dispute alone; but a much worfe use has been made

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 89 made of them by Jewish rabbies, Christian fathers, and Mahometan doctors, in their prophane extensions of this part of the Mo-The creation of the first man faic history. is described by some, as if, Preadamites, they had affisted at it. They talk of his beauty as if they had feen him, of his gigantic fize as if they had measured him, and of his prodigious knowledge as if they had conversed with him. They point out the very foot where Eve laid her head the first time he enjoyed her. They have minutes of the whole conversation between this mother of mankind, who damned her children before the bore them, and the ferpent. Some are positive that CAIN quarrelled with ABEL about a point of doctrine, and others affirm that the dispute arose about a girl. A great deal of fuch stuff may be easily collected about Enoch, about NoAH. and about the fons of NOAH; but I wave any farther mention of fuch impertinencies as Bonzes or TALAPOINS would almost blush to relate. Upon the whole matter. if we may guess at the design of an author, by the contents of his book, the defign of Moses, or of the author of the history ascribed to him, in this part of it, was to inform the people of Israel of their descent from Noah by SEM, and of Noah's from ADAM by SETH; to illustrate their original;

#### 90 LETTER III.

to establish their claim to the land of Chanaan, and to justify all the cruelties committed by Joshua in the conquest of the Chanaanites, in whom, says Bochart, "the prophecy of Noah was completed, when they were subdued by the Israelites, who had been so long slaves to the Egyptians."

Allow me to make, as I go along, a short reflection or two on this prophecy, and the completion of it, as they stand recorded in the Pentateuch, out of many that might be made. The terms of the prophecy then are not very clear: and the curse pronounced in it contradicts all our notions of order and of justice. One is tempted to think, that the patriarch was still drunk; and that no man in his fenses could hold fuch language, or pass such a sentence. Certain it is, that no writer but a Jew could impute to the oeconomy of divine providence the accomplishment of fuch a prediction, nor make the Supreme Being the executor of fuch a curle.

HAM alone offended, Chanaan was innocent; for the Hebrew and other doctors who would make the fon an accomplice with his father, affirm not only without, but against, the express authority of the text. Chanaan was however alone cursed:

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. QI curfed: and he became, according to his grandfather's prophecy, " a fervant of fer-"vants," that is, the vilest and worst of flaves (for I take these words in a sense, if not the most natural, the most favorable to the prophecy, and the least absurd) to SEM, tho not to JAPHET, when the Israelites conquered Palestine; to one of his uncles, not to his brethren. Will it be faid-it has been faid—that where we read CHANAAN. we are to understand HAM, whose brethren SEM and IAPHET were? At this rate, we shall never know what we read: as these critics never care what they fay. be faid—this has been faid too—that HAM was punished in his posterity, when CHA-NAAN was curfed, and his descendants were exterminated? But who does not fee that the curse, and the punishment, in this case, fell on CHANAAN and his posterity, exclufively of the rest of the posterity of HAM; and were therefore the curse and punishment of the fon, not of the father, properly? The descendants of Mesraim, another of his fons, were the Egyptians: and they were so far from being servants of servants to their cousins the Semites, that these were fervants of fervants to them, during more than fourfcore years. Why the posterity of Chanaan was to be deemed an accurred race, it is easy to account; and I have

men-

# 92 LETTER III.

mentioned it just now. But it is not so easy to account, why the posterity of the righteous Sem, that great example of filial reverence, became slaves to another branch of the family of HAM.

Ir would not be worth while to lengthen this tedious letter, by fetting down any more of the contents of the history of the bible. Your lordship may please to call the substance of it to your mind; and your native candor and love of truth will oblige you then to confess, that these sacred books do not aim, in any part of them, at any thing like universal chronology and history. They contain a very imperfect account of the Israelites themselves; of their settlement in the land of promise, of which, by the way, they never had entire, and scarce ever peaceable possession; of their divisions, apostafies, repentances, relapfes, triumphs, and defeats under the occasional government of their judges, and under that of their kings; of the Galilean and Samaritan captivities, into which they were carried by the kings of Assyria, and of that which was brought on the remnant of this people when the kingdom of Judah was destroyed by those princes who governed the empire founded on the union of Niniveh and Babylon. These things are all related, your lordlordship knows, in a very summary and confused manner: and we learn so little of other nations by these accounts, that if we did not borrow some light from the traditions of other nations, we should scarce understand them. One particular observation, and but one, I will make, to shew what knowledge in the history of mankind, and in the computation of time, may be expected from these books. The Assyrians were their neighbours, powerful neighbours, with whom they had much and long to do. Of this empire therefore, if of any thing, we might hope to find some fatisfactory account. What do we find? The scripture takes no notice of any Assyrian kingdom, till just before the time when prophane hiftory makes that empire to end. Then we hear of Phul, of Teglath-Pha-LASSER, who was perhaps the fame person, and of SALMANASER, who took Samaria in the twelfth of the aera of NABONASSER, that is, twelve years after the Affyrian empire was no more. Senacherib fucceeds to him, and Asserhaddon to Senacheris. What shall we say to this apparent contrariety? If the filence of the bible creates a strong presumption against the first, may not the filence of prophane authority create some against the second Assyrian Monarchs? The pains that are taken to perfuade, that there

there is room enough between SARDANAPA-Lus and Cyrus for the second, will not resolve the difficulty. Something much more plaufible may be faid, but even this will be hypothetical, and liable to great So that upon the whole contradiction. matter, the feriptures are fo far from giving us light into general history, that they encrease the obscurity even of those parts to which they have the nearest relation. We have therefore neither in prophane nor in facred authors fuch authentic, clear, diflinct, and full accounts of the originals of antient nations, and of the great events of those ages that are commonly called the first ages, as deserve to go by the name of history, or as afford sufficient materials for chronology and history.

I MIGHT now proceed to observe to your lordship how this has happened, not only by the necessary consequences of human nature, and the ordinary course of human affairs, but by the policy, artifice, corruption, and folly of mankind. But this would be to heap digression upon digression, and to presume too much on your patience. I shall therefore content myself to apply these rested in it; as soon as your lordship has rested yourself a little after reading,

and I after writing fo long a letter.

# STUDY of HISTORY.

#### LETTER IV.

- I. That there is in history sufficient authenticity to render it useful, notwithstanding all objections to the contrary.
- II. Of the method and due restrictions to be observed in the study of it.

WHETHER the letter I now begin to write will be long or short, I know not: but I find my memory is refreshed, my imagination warmed, and matter flows in so fast upon me, that I have not time to press it close. Since therefore you have provoked me to write, you must be content to take what follows.

I have observed already that we are apt naturally to apply to ourselves what has happened to other men, and that examples take their force from hence; as well those which history, as those which experience, offers to our reslection. What we do not believe to have happened therefore, we shall

not thus apply: and for want of the same application, fuch examples will not have the same effect. Antient history, such antient history as I have described, is quite unfit therefore in this respect to answer the ends that every reasonable man should propose to himself in this study; because such antient hiftory will never gain fufficient credit with any reasonable man. A tale well told, or a comedy or a tragedy well wrought up, may have a momentary effect upon the mind, by heating the imagination, furprizing the judgment, and affecting strongly the passions. The Athenians are faid to have been transported into a kind of martial phrenzy by the representation of a tragedy of Aeschylus, and to have marched under this influence from the theatre to the plains of MARATHON. These momentary impressions might be managed, for aught I know, in fuch manner as to contribute a little, by frequent repetitions of them, towards maintaining a kind of habitual contempt of folly, deteftation of vice, and admiration of virtue in well-policed common-wealths. But then these impresfions cannot be made, nor this little effect be wrought, unless the fables bear an appearance of truth. When they bear this appearance, reason connives at the innocent fraud of imagination; reason dispenses,

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 97 in favor of probability, with those strict rules of criticism that she has established to try the truth of fact: but, after all, she receives these fables as fables; and as such only she permits imagination to make the most of them. If they pretended to be hiflory, they would be foon subjected to another and more fevere examination. What may have happened, is the matter of an ingenious fable: what has happened, is that of an authentic history: the impressions which one or the other makes are in proportion. When imagination grows lawless and wild, rambles out of the precincts of nature, and tells of heroes and giants, fairies and enchanters, of events and of phaenomena repugnant to universal experience. to our clearest and most distinct ideas, and to all the known laws of nature, reason does not connive a moment; but, far from receiving fuch narrations as historical, she rejects them as unworthy to be placed even among the fabulous. Such narrations therefore cannot make the flightest mornentary impressions on a mind fraught with knowledge, and void of superstition. Imposed by authority, and assisted by artifice, the delufion hardly prevails over common fense; blind ignorance almost sees, and rash fuperstition hefitates: nothing less than enthusiasm

# 98 LETTER IV.

thusiasm and phrensy can give credit to such histories, or apply such examples. Don QUIXOTE believed; but even SANCHO doubted.

WHAT I have faid will not be much controverted by any man who has red AMApis of Gaul, or has examined our antient traditions without prepoffession. The truth is, the principal difference between them feems to be this. In Amadis of Gaul, we have a thread of abfurdities that are invented without any regard to probability, and that lay no claim to belief: antient traditions are an heap of fables, under which fome particular truths, infcrutable, and therefore useless to mankind, may lie concealed; which have a just pretence to nothing more, and yet impose themselves upon us, and become, under the venerable name of antient history, the foundations of modern fables, the materials with which so many fystems of fancy have been erected.

But now, as men are apt to carry their judgments into extremes, there are some that will be ready to insist that all history is fabulous, and that the very best is nothing better than a probable tale, artfully contrived, and plausibly told, wherein truth

#### Of the Study of History. 99 truth and falshood are indistinguishably. blended together. All the instances, and all the common-place arguments, that BAYLE and others have employed to establish this fort of Pyrrhonism, will be quoted: and from thence it will be concluded, that if the pretended histories of the first ages, and of the originals of nations, be too improbable and too ill-vouched to procure any degree of belief, those histories that have been writ later, that carry a greater air of probability, and that boaft even cotemporary authority, are at least infusficient to gain that degree of firm belief, which is necessary to render the study of them useful to mankind. But here that happens which often happens: the premises are true, and the conclusion is false; because a general axiom is established precanoully on a certain number of partial obfervations. This matter is of confequence; for it tends to ascertain the degrees of affent that we may give to history.

I AGREE then that history has been purposely and systematically falsissed in all ages, and that partiality and prejudice have occasioned both voluntary and involuntary errors even in the best. Let me say without offence, my lord, since I may say it G 2 with

#### 100 LETTER IV.

with truth and am able to prove it, that ecclefiaftical authority has led the way to this corruption in all ages, and all religions. How monstrous were the absurdities that the priefthood imposed on the ignorance and superstition of mankind in the Pagan world, concerning the originals of religions and governments, their institutions and rites, their laws and customs? What opportunities had they for fuch impositions, whilft the keeping the records and collecting the traditions was in fo many nations the peculiar office of this order of men? A custom highly extolled by Josephus, but plainly liable to the groffest frauds, and even a temptation to them. If the foundations of Judaism and Christianity have been laid in truth, yet what numberless fables have been invented to raile, to embellish, and to support these structures, according to the interest and taste of the several architects? That the Jews have been guilty of this will be allowed: and, to the shame of Christians, if not of Christianity, the fathers of one church have no right to throw the first stone at the fathers of the other. Deliberate fystematical lying has been practifed and encouraged from age to age; and among all the pious frauds that have been employed to maintain a reverence and zeal for

Of the STUDY of HISTORY, 101 for their religion in the minds of men, this abuse of history has been one of the principal and most successful: an evident and experimental proof, by the way, of what I have infifted upon fo much, the aptitude and natural tendency of history to form our opinions, and to fettle our habits. This righteous expedient was in so much use and repute in the Greek church, that one METAPHRASTUS wrote a treatife on the art of composing holy romances: the fact, if I remember right, is cited by BAILLET in his book of the lives of the faints. He and other learned men of the Roman church have thought it of fervice to their cause, fince the refurrection of letters, to detect fome impostures, and to depose, or to unniche, according to the French expression, now and then a reputed faint; but they feem in doing this to mean no more than a fort of composition: they give up some fables that they may defend others with greater advantage, and they make truth ferve as a stalking-horse to error. The same spirit, that prevailed in the Eastern church, prevailed in the Western, and prevails still. A strong proof of it appeared lately in the countrywhere I am. A fudden fury of devotion seized the people of Paris for a G 2 little

#### 102 LETTER IV.

little priest\*, undistinguished during his life, and dubbed a faint by the Jansenists after his death. Had the first minister been a Jansenist, the faint had been a faint still. All France had kept his festival: and, fince there are thousands of eye-witneffes ready to attest the truth of all the miracles supposed to have been wrought at his tomb, notwithstanding the discouragement which these zealots have met with from the government; we may affure our felves, that these filly impostures would have been transmitted in all the solemn pomp of history, from the knaves of this age to the fools of the next.

This lying spirit has gone forth from ecclesiastical to other historians: and I might sill many pages with instances of extravagant sables that have been invented in several nations, to celebrate their antiquity, to ennoble their originals, and to make them appear illustrious in the arts of peace and the triumphs of war. When the brain is well heated, and devotion or vanity, the semblance of virtue or real vice, and, above all, disputes and contests, have inspired that complication of passions we term zeal,

<sup>\*</sup> The abbé Paris.

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 103 the effects are much the fame, and history becomes very often a lying panegyric or a lying fatire; for different nations, or different parties in the fame nation, belie one another without any respect for truth, as they murder one another without any regard to right or fense of humanity. Religious zeal may boast this horrid advantage over civil zeal, that the effects of it have been more fanguinary, and the malice more unrelenting. In another respect they are more alike, and keep a nearer proportion: different religions have not been quite fo barbarous to one another as fects of the same religion; and, in like manner, nation has had better quarter from nation, than party from party. But, in all these controversies, men have pushed their rage beyond their own and their adversaries lives: they have endeavoured to interest posterity in their quarrels, and by rendering history subservient to this wicked purpose, they have done their utmost to perpetuate scandal, and to immortalise their The Heathen taxed the Jews animolity. even with idolatry; the Jews joined with the Heathen to render Christianity odious: but the church, who beat them at their own weapons during these contests, has had this further triumph over them, as well as over the feveral fects that have arisen with-G 4

# 104 LETTER IV.

in her own pale: the works of those who have writ against her have been destroyed; and whatever she advanced, to justify her self and to desame her adversaries, is preferved in her annals, and the writings of her doctors.

THE charge of corrupting history, in the cause of religion, has been always committed to the most famous champions, and greatest saints of each church; and, if I was not more afraid of tiring, than of scandalising your lordship, I could quote to you examples of modern churchmen who have endeavoured to justify four language by the New testament, and cruelty by the Old: nay, what is execrable beyond imagination, and what strikes horror into every mind that entertains due fentiments of the Supreme Being, God himself has been cited for rallying and infulting ADAM after his fall. In other cases, this charge belongs to the pedants of every nation, and the tools of every party. What accusations of idolatry and fuperstition have not been brought, and aggravated against the Mahometans? Those wretched Christians who returned from those wars, so improperly called the holy wars, rumoured these stories about the West: and you may find, in fome

#### Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 105 some of the old chroniclers and romancewriters, as well as poets, the Saracens called Paynims; tho furely they were much further off from any suspicion of Polytheism, than those who called them by that name. When MAHOMET the second took Constantinople in the fifteenth century, the Mahometans began to be a little better, and but a little better known, than they had been before, to these parts of the world. But their religion, as well as their customs and manners, was strangely misrepresented by the Greek refugees that fled from the Turks: and the terror and hatred which this people had inspired by the rapidity of their conquests, and by their ferocity, made all these misrepresentations universally pass for truths. Many fuch instances may be collected from Maraccio's refutation of the koran, and RELANDUS has published a very valuable treatile on purpose to refute these calumnies, and to justify the Does not this example Mahometans. incline your lordship to think, that the Heathens, and the Arians, and other heretics, would not appear quite fo abfurd in their opinions, nor so abominable in their practice, as the orthodox Christians have represented them; if some RELANDUS could arife, with the materials necessary

to their justification in his hands? He

who

who reflects on the circumstances that attended letters, from the time when Con-STANTINE, instead of uniting the characters of emperor and fovereign pontiff in himfelf when he became Christian, as they were united in him and all the other emperors in the Pagan system of government, gave fo much independent wealth and power to the clergy, and the means of acquiring fo much more: he who carries these reflections on through all the latter empire, and through those ages of ignorance and superstition, wherein it was hard to fay which was greatest, the tyranny of the clergy, or the fervility of the laity: he who confiders the extreme feverity, for instance, of the laws made by Theodosius in order to stifle every writing that the orthodox clergy, that is, the clergy then in fashion, difliked; or the character and influence of fuch a priest as GREGORY called the great, who proclaimed war to all heathen learning in order to promote Christian verity; and flattered Brunehault, and abetted Phocas: he who confiders all these things, I say, will not be at a loss to find the reasons, why history, both that which was writ before, and a great part of that which has been writ fince the Christian aera, is come to us 'so imperfect and so corrupt.

WHEN

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 107

WHEN the imperfection is due to a total want of memorials, either because none were originally written, or because they have been lost by devastations of countries, extirpations of people, and other accidents in a long course of time; or because zeal, malice, and policy have joined their endeavours to destroy them purposely; we must be content to remain in our ignorance, and there is no great harm in that. cure from being deceived, I can submit to be uninformed. But when there is not a total want of memorials, when some have been loft or destroyed, and others have been preserved and propagated, then we are in danger of being deceived: and therefore he must be very implicit indeed who receives for true the history of any religion or nation, and much more that of any feet or party, without having the means of confronting it with some other history. A reafonable man will not be thus implicit. He will not establish the truth of history on fingle, but on concurrent testimony. If there be none fuch, he will doubt absolutely: if there be a little fuch, he will proportion his affent or diffent accordingly. A fmall gleam of light, borrowed from foreign anecdotes, ferves often to discover a whole fystem of falshood: and even they

who corrupt history frequently betray themselves by their ignorance or inadventency. Examples whereof I could easily produce. Upon the whole matter, in all these cases we cannot be deceived essentially, unless we please: and therefore there is no reason to establish Pyrrhonism, that we may avoid the ridicule of credulity.

In all other cases, there is less reason still to do fo; for when histories and historical memorials abound, even those that are false ferve to the discovery of the truth. Inspired by different passions, and contrived for opposite purposes, they contradict; and, contradicting, they convict one ano-Criticism separates the ore from the drofs, and extracts from various authors a feries of true history, which could not have been found entire in any one of them, and will command our affent, when it is formed with judgment, and represented with candor. If this may be done, as it has been done fometimes, with the help of authors who writ on purpose to deceive; how much more eafily, and more effectually may it be done, with the help of those who paid a greater regard to truth? In a multitude of writers there will be always fome, either incapable of gross prevarica.

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 100 tion from the fear of being discovered, and of acquiring infamy whilft they feek for fame; or else attached to truth upon a nobler and furer principle. It is certain that these, even the last of them, are fallible. Bribed by some passion or other, the former may venture now and then to propagate a falshood, or to disguise a truth; like the painter that drew in profile, as Lucian fays, the picture of a prince that had but one eye. Montagne objects to the memorials of Du Bellay, that the the gross of the facts be truly related, yet these authors turned every thing they mentioned to the advantage of their master, and mentioned nothing which could not be fo turn-The old fellow's words are worth quoting. " De contourner le jugement " des evenemens souvene contre raison à " notre avantage, & d'obmettre tout ce " qu'il y a de chatouilleux en la vie de leur " maistre, ils en font mestier. and fuch as these, deviate occasionally and voluntarily from truth; but even they who are attached to it the most religiously may flide fometimes into involuntary error. In matters of history we prefer very justly cotemporary authority; and yet cotemporary authors are the most liable to be warped from the straight rule of truth, in writing

writing on fubjects which have affected them strongly, "et quorum pars magna fuerunt." I am so persuaded of this from what I have felt in myself, and observed in others, that if life and health enough fall to my share, and I am able to finish what I meditate, a kind of history, from the late queen's accesfion to the throne, to the peace of Utrecht, there will be no materials that I shall examine more fcrupuloufly and feverely, than those of the time when the events to be spoken of were in transaction. But the the writers of these two forts, both of whom pay as much regard to truth as the various infirmities of our nature admit, are fallible; yet this fallibility will not be fufficient to give colour to Pyrrhonism. Where their fincerity as to fact is doubtful, we strike out truth by the confrontation of different accounts: as we strike out sparks of fire by the collision of flints and steel. Where their judgments are suspicious of partiality, we may judge for ourselves; or adopt their judgments, after weighing them with certain grains of allowance. A little natural fagacity will proportion these grains according to the particular circumstances of the authors, or their general characters; for even these influence. Thus MONTAGNE pretends, but he exaggerates a little, that Guic-

#### Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 111

GUICCIARDIN no where ascribes any one action to a virtuous, but every one to a vicious principle. Something like this has been reproached to TACITUS; and, notwithstanding all the sprightly loose observations of Montagne in one of his effays. where he labours to prove the contrary, read Plutarch's comparisons in what language you please, I am of Bodin's mind. you will perceive that they were made by a Greek. In short, my lord, the favorable opportunities of corrupting history have been often interrupted, and are now over in fo many countries, that truth penetrates even into those where lying continues still to be part of the policy ecclefiaftical and civil; or where, to fay the best we can fay, truth is never fuffered to appear, till she has passed through hands, out of which the feldom returns entire and undefiled.

But it is time I should conclude this head, under which I have touched some of those reasons that shew the folly of endeavouring to establish universal Pyrrhonism in matters of history, because there are few histories without some lies, and none without some mistakes; and that prove the body of history which we posses, since antient

tient memorials have been fo critically examined, and modern memorials have been fo multiplied, to contain in it fuch a probable feries of events, eafily diftinguishable from the improbable, as force the affent of every man who is in his fenses, and are therefore fufficient to answer all the purposes of the study of history. I might have appealed perhaps, without entering into the argument at all, to any man of candor whether his doubts concerning the truth of hiftory have hindered him from applying the examples he has met with in it, and from judging of the present, and sometimes of the future, by the past? whether he has not been touched with reverence and admiration, at the virtue and wisdom of some men, and of some ages; and whether he has not felt indignation and contempt for others? whether Epaminondas. or Phocion, for instance, the Decii, or the Scipios, have not raised in his mind a flame of public spirit, and private virtue? and whether he has not shuddered with horror at the profcriptions of Marius and Sylla, at the treachery of Theodorus and Achillas, and at the confummate cruelty of an infant king? "Quis non con-" tra Marii arma, et contra Syllae pro-" fcrip-

# Of the Study of History. 113

" fcriptionem concitatur? Quis non The" odoto, et Achillae, et ipsi puero, non

" puerile auso facinus, infestus est?" If all this be a digression therefore, your lordship will be so good as to excuse it.

II. WHAT has been faid concerning the multiplicity of histories, and of historical memorials wherewith our libraries abound fince the refurrection of letters happened, and the art of printing began, puts me in mind of another general rule, that ought to be observed by every man who intends to make a real improvement, and to become wifer as well as better, by the fludy of history. I hinted at this rule in a former letter, where I faid that we should neither grope in the dark, nor wander in the light. History must have a certain degree of probability, and authenticity, or the examples we find in it will not carry a force fufficient to make due impressions on our minds, nor to illustrate nor to strengthen the precepts of philosophy and the rules of good policy. But besides, when histories have this necessary authenticity and probability, there is much discernment to be employed in the choice and the use we make of them. Some are to be red, some are to be studied; and some may be neglected H entirely.

entirely, not only without detriment, but with advantage. Some are the proper objects of one man's curiofity, fome of another's, and some of all men's, but all history is not an object of curiofity for any man. He who improperly, wantonly, and abfurdly makes it fo, indulges a fort of canine appetite: the curiofity of one, like the hunger of the other, devours ravenously and without distinction whatever falls in it's way; but neither of them digefts. They heap crudity upon crudity, and nourish and improve nothing but their distemper. Some fuch characters I have known, tho it is not the most common extreme into which men are apt to fall. One of them I knew in this country. He joined, to a more than athletic strength of body, a prodigious memory; and to both a prodigious industry. He had red almost constantly twelve or fourteen hours a day, for five and twenty or thirty years; and had heaped together as much learning as could be crowded into an head. In the course of my acquaintance with him, I confulted him once or twice, not oftener; for I found this mass of learning of as little use to me as to the owner. The man was communicative enough; but nothing was distinct in his mind. could it be otherwise? he had never spared time

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 115 time to think, all was employed in reading. His reason had not the merit of common mechanism. When you press a watch or pull a clock, they answer your question with precision; for they repeat exactly the hour of the day, and tell you neither more nor less than you defire to know. But when you asked this man a question, he overwhelmed you by pouring forth all that the feveral terms or words of your question recalled to his memory: and if he omitted any thing, it was that very thing to which the sense of the whole question should have led him and confined him. To ask him a question, was to wind up a fpring in his memory, that rattled on with valt rapidity, and confused noise, till the force of it was spent: and you went away with all the noise in your ears, flunned and un-informed. I never left him that I was not ready to fay to him, "Dieu " vous fasse la grace de devenir moins sa-" vant!" a wish that LA MOTHE LE VAYER mentions upon some occasion or other, and that he would have done well to have applied to himself upon many.

He who reads with discernment and choice, will acquire less learning, but more knowledge: and as this knowledge is collected with design, and cultivated with art H 2 and

and method, it will be at all times of immediate and ready use to himself and others,

Thus useful arms in magazines we place, All rang'd in order; and dispos'd with grace: Nor thus alone the curious eye to please; But to be found, when need requires, with ease:

You remember the verses, my lord, in our friend's Essay on criticism, which was the work of his childhood almost; but is such a monument of good sense and poetry as no other, that I know, has raised in his riper years.

HE who reads without this discernment and choice, and, like Bodin's pupil, refolves to read all, will not have time, no nor capacity neither, to do any thing else. He will not be able to think, without which it is impertinent to read; nor to act, without which it is impertinent to think. He will affemble materials with much pains, and purchase them at much expence, and have neither leifure nor skill to frame them into properscantlings, or to prepare them for use. To what purpose should he husband his time, or learn architecture? he has no defign to build. But then to what purpose all these quarries of stone, all these mountains of fand and lime, all these forests of oak and deal?

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 117 deal? " Magno impendio temporum, mag-" na alienarum aurium moleftia, laudatio " haec constat, O hominem literatum! " Simus hoc titulo rufticiore contenti, O " virum bonum!" We may add, and SE-NECA might have added in his own style, and according to the manners and characters of his own age, another title as ruftic, and as little in fashion, "O virum sapien-" tia sua simplicem, et simplicitate sua sa-" pientem! O virum utilem fibi, fuis, rei-" publicae, et humano generi!" I have faid perhaps already, but no matter, it cannot be repeated too often, that the drift of all philosophy, and of all political speculations, ought to be the making us better men, and better citizens. Those studies, which have no intention towards improving our moral characters, have no pretence to be styled philosophical. "Quis est enim," fays Tully in his Offices, qui nullis officii praeceptis " tradendis, philosophum se audeat dicere?" Whatever political speculations, instead of preparing us to be useful to society and to promote the happiness of mankind, are only fystems for gratifying private ambition, and promoting private interests at the public expence; all fuch, I fay, deferve to be burnt, and the authors of them to starve, like Machiavel, in a jail. H 3 LET:

The state of the s status is to be a second to as the state of the mest the branching . A STATE OF S

- The great use of history, properly so called, as distinguished from the writings of mere annalists and antiquaries.
- II. Greek and Roman historians.
- III. Some idea of a complete hiftory.
- IV. Further cautions to be observed in this study, and the regulation of it according to the different professions, and situations of men: above all, the use to be made of it (1) by divines, and (2) by those who are called to the service of their country.

REMEMBER my last letter ended abruptly, and a long interval has fince passed: so that the thread I had then spun has slipt from me. I will try to recover it, and to pursue the task your lordship has obliged me to continue. Besides the pleasure of obeying your orders, it is likewise of some advantage to myself, to recollect H 4

my thoughts, and resume a study in which I was conversant formerly. For nothing can be more true than that faying of Solon reported by Plato, the cenfured by him, impertinently enough in one of his wild books of laws-" Affidue addifcens, ad fenium ve-"nio." The truth is, the most knowing man, in the course of the longest life, will have always much to learn, and the wifest and best much to improve. This rule will hold in the knowledge and improvement to be acquired by the study of history: and therefore even he who has gone to this school in his youth, should not neglect it in his "I read in LIVY," fays MONTAGNE, " what another man does not: and PLU-" TARCH red there what I do not." Just fo the fame man may read at fifty what he did not read in the same book at five-andtwenty: at least I have found it so, by my own experience, on many occasions.

By comparing, in this study, the experience of other men and other ages with our own, we improve both: we analyse, as it were, philosophy. We reduce all the abstract speculations of ethics, and all the general rules of human policy, to their first principles. With these advantages every man may, tho few men do, advance daily towards those ideas, those increated essentiations.

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 121 ces a Platonist would say, which no human creature can reach in practice, but in the nearest approaches to which the perfection of our nature confifts; because every approach of this kind renders a man better, and wifer for himself, for his family, for the little community of his own country, and for the great community of the world. Be not furprised, my lord, at the order in which I place these objects. Whatever order divines and moralists, who contemplate the duties belonging to these objects, may place them in, this is the order they hold in nature: and I have always thought that we might lead ourselves and others to private virtue, more effectually by a due observation of this order, than by any of those sublime refinements that pervert it.

Self-Love but serves the virtuous mind to wake;
As the small pebble stirs the peaceful lake.
The centre mov'd, a circle strait succeeds;
Another still, and still another spreads:
Friend, parent, neighbour, first it will embrace,
His country next, and next all human race.

So fings our friend POPE, my lord, and so I believe. So I shall prove too, if I mistake not, in an epistle I am about to write to him, in order to complete a set that were writ some years ago.

A MAN

A MAN of my age, who returns to the fludy of hiftory, has no time to lofe, because he has little to live: a man of your lordship's age has no time to lose, because he has much For different reasons therefore the fame rules will fuit us. Neither of us must grope in the dark, neither of us must wander in the light. I have done the first formerly a good deal; " ne verba mihi daren-" tur; ne aliquid esse, in hac recondita antiquitatis scientia, magni ac secreti boni " judicaremus." If you take my word, you will throw none of your time away in the same manner: and I shall have the less regret for that which I have mispent, if I perfunde you to haften down from the broken traditions of antiquity, to the more entire as well as more authentic histories of ages more modern. In the study of these we shall find many a complete series of events, preceded by a deduction of their immediate and remote causes, related in their full extent, and accompanied with fuch a detail of circumstances, and characters, as may transport the attentive reader back to the very time, make him a party to the councils, and an actor in the whole scene of affairs. Such draughts as these, either found in hiflory or extracted by our own application from

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 122 from it, and fuch alone, are truly useful. Thus history becomes what she ought to be, and what she has been sometimes called, " magistra vitae," the mistress, like philosophy of human life. If she is not this, she is at best "nuntia vetustatis," the gazette of antiquity, or a dry register of uteless anecdotes. Suetonius fays that Tiberius used to enquire of the grammarians, " quae mater He-" cubae? quod Achillis nomen inter virgines " fuiffet? quid Syrenes cantare fint solitae?" SENECA mentions certain Greek authors. who examined very accurately, whether Anacreon loved wine or women best, whether Sappho was a common whore, with other points of equal importance: and I make no doubt but that a man, better acquainted than I have the honor to be with the learned persons of our own country, might find fome who have discovered several anecdotes concerning the giant Albion, concerning Samothes the fon or Brito the grand-fon of JAPHET, and concerning BRUTUS who led a colony into our island after the siege of Troy, as the others re-peopled it after the deluge. But ten millions of fuch anecdotes as these, tho they were true; and complete authentic volumes of Egyptian or Chaldean, of Greek or Latin, of Gallic or British, of French or Saxon records, would be of no value

value in my sense, because of no use towards our improvement in wisdom and virtue; if they contained nothing more than dynasties and genealogies, and a bare mention of remarkable events in the order of time, like journals, chronological tables, or dry and meagre annals.

I say the fame of all those modern compositions in which we find rather the heads of history, than any thing that deserves to be called hiftory. Their authors are either abridgers or compilers. The first do neither honor to themselves nor good to mankind; for furely the abridger is in a form below the translator: and the book, at least the history, that wants to be abridged, does not deferve to be red. They have done anciently a great deal of hurt by substituting many a bad book in the place of a good one; and by giving occasion to men, who contented themselves with extracts and abridgments, to neglect and, through their neglect, to lofe the invaluable originals: for which reason I curse Constanting PORPHYROGENETES as heartily as I do GREGORY. The fecond are of some use, as far as they contribute to preserve public acts, and dates, and the memory of great events. But they who are thus employed have

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 125 have feldom the means of knowing those private passages on which all public transactions depend, and as seldom the skill and the talents necessary to put what they do know well together: they cannot see the working of the mine, but their industry collects the matter that is thrown out. It is the business, or it should be so, of others to separate the pure ore from the dross, to stamp it into coin, and to enrich not encumber mankind. When there are none sufficient to this task, there may be antiquaries, and there may be journalists or annalists, but there are no historians.

It is worth while to observe the progress that the Romans and the Greeks made towards hiftory. The Romans had journalists or annalists from the very beginning of their state. In the fixth century, or very near it at foonest, they began to have antiquaries, and some attempts were made towards writing of history. I call these first historical productions attempts only or effays: and they were no more, neither among the Romans noramong the Greeks. "Graeci " ipfi fic initio scriptitarunt ut noster Cato, " ut Pictor, ut Piso." It is Antony, not the triumvir, my lord, but his grandfather the famous orator, who fays this in the fecond

book of Tully De oratore: he adds afterwards, "Itaque qualis apud Graecos PHE-" RECYDES, HELLANICUS, ACUSILAUS, alii-" que permulti, talis noster Cato, et Pic-" TOR, et Piso." I know that ANTONY speaks here strictly of defect of style and want of oratory. They were "tantummodo " narratores, non exornatores," as he expresses himself: but as they wanted style and skill to write in such a manner as might anfwer all the ends of history, so they wanted materials. Pherecydes writ fomething about IPHICENIA, and the festivals of BAC-CHUS. HELLANICUS was a poetical historian, and Acusil Aus graved genealogies on plates of brass. Pictor, who is called by Livy " scriptorum antiquissimus," published, I think, fome fhort annals of his own time. Neither he nor Piso could have fufficient materials for the history of Rome; nor Cato, I prefume, even for the antiquities of Italy. The Romans, with the other people of that country, were then just rising out of barbarity, and growing acquainted with letters; for those that the Grecian colonies might bring into Sicily, and the fouthern parts of Italy, spred little, or lasted little, and made in the whole no figure. And whatever learning might have flourished among the ancient Etrurians, which was perhaps

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 127 perhaps at most nothing better than augury, and divination, and superstitious rites. which were admired and cultivated in ignorant ages, even that was almost entirely worn out of memory. Pedants, who would impose all the traditions of the four first ages of Rome, for authentic history, have infifted much on certain annals, of which mention is made in the very place I have just now quoted. "Ab initio rerumRomanarum, fays the fame interlocutor, " usque ad P. " Mucium pontificem maximum, res om-" nes fingulorum annorum mandabat literis " pontifex maximus, efferebatque in album. " et proponebat tabulam domi, potestas ut " effet populo cognoscendi; iidemque e-" tiam nunc annales maximi nominantur." But, my lord, be pleased to take notice. that the very distinction I make is made here between a bare annalist and an historian: " erat historia nihil aliud," in these early days, "nisi annalium confectio." Take notice likewise, by the way, that Livy, whose particular application it had been to fearch into this matter, affirms politively that the greatest part of all public and private monuments, among which he specifies these very annals, had been destroyed in the fack of Rome by the Gauls: and PRUTARCH cites CLODIUS for the same affertion, in the life of NUMA POMPILIUS. Take notice, in the laft

last place, of that which is more immediately to our present purpose. These annals could contain nothing more than short minutes or memorandums hung up in a table at the pontiff's house, like the rules of the game in a billiard-room, and much fuch history as we have in the epitomies prefixed to the books of Livy or of any other historian, in lapidary infcriptions, or in some modern Materials for history they almanacks. were no doubt, but scanty and infufficient; fuch as those ages could produce when writing and reading were accomplishments fo uncommon, that the praetor was directed by law, clavum pangere, to drive a nail into the door of a temple, that the number of years might be reckoned by the number of nails. Such in short as we have in monkish annalists, and other ancient chroniclers of nations now in being: but not fuch as can entitle the authors of them to be called historians, nor can enable others to write history in that fulness in which it must be written to become a lesson of ethics and politics. The truth is, nations, like men, have their infancy: and the few passages of that time, which they retain, are not fuch as deferved most to be remembered; but such as, being most proportioned to that age, made the ftrongest impressions on their minds. those nations that preserve their dominion long

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 129 long and grow up to manhood, the elegant as well as the necessary arts and sciences are improved to some degree of perfection: and history, that was at first intended only to re-

cord the names, or perhaps the general characters of some famous men, and to transmit in gross the remarkable events of every age to posterity, is raised to answer another, and a nobler end.

II. Thus it happened among the Greeks, but much more among the Romans, not-withstanding the prejudices in favor of the former even among the latter. I have sometimes thought that VIRGIL might have justly ascribed to his countrymen the praise of writing history better, as well as that of affording the noblest subjects for it, in those famous verses, where the different excellencies of the two nations are so finely touched: but he would have weakened perhaps by lengthening, and have stattened the climax. Open Herodotus, you are en-

Excudent alii spirantia mollius aera,
Credo equidem: vivos ducent de marmore vultus;
Orabunt causas melius: coelique meatus
Describent radio, et surgentia sidera dicent:
Tu regere imperio populos, Romane, memento:
Hae tibi erunt artes; pacisque imponere morem,
Parcere subjectis, et debellare superbos.

T

tertained by an agreeable story-teller, who meant to entertain, and nothing more. Read Thucydides or Xenophon, you are taught indeed as well as entertained: and the statesman or the general, the philosopher or the orator, speaks to you in every page. They wrote on subjects on which they were well informed, and they treated them fully: they maintained the dignity of history, and thought it beneath them to vamp up old traditions, like the writers of their age and country, and to be the trumpeters of a lying antiquity. The Cyropaedia of Xenophon may be objected perhaps; but if he gave it for a romance, not an history, as he might for aught we can tell, it is out of the case: and if he gave it for an history, not a romance, I should prefer his authority to that of HERODOTUS or any other of his countrymen. But however this might be, and whatever merit we may justly ascribe to these two writers, who were almost single in their kind, and who treated but small portions of history; certain it is in general, that the levity as well as loquacity of the Greeks made them incapable of keeping up to the true standard of history: and even Polybius and Dionysius of Halicarnassus must bow to the great Roman authors. Many principal

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 131 men of that commonwealth wrote memotials of their own actions and their own times: Sylla, CAESAR, LABIENUS, POL-LIO, Augustus, and others. What writers of memorials, what compilers of the materia historica were these? What genius was necessary to finish up the pictures that fuch mafters had sketched? Rome afforded men that were equal to the talk. Let the remains, the precious remains of Sallust, of Livy, and of Tacitus, witness this truth. When Tacitus wrote, even the appearances of virtue had been long proferibed, and tafte was grown corrupt as well as manners. Yet history preserved her integrity, and her luftre. She preferved them in the writings of some whom Tacirus mentions, in none perhaps more than his own; every line of which out-weighs whole pages of fuch a rhetor as Famianus STRADA. I fingle him out among the moderns, because he had the foolish presumption to censure Tacitus, and to write history himself: and your lordship will forgive this thort excursion in honor of a favorite author.

WHAT a school of private and public virtue had been opened to us at the resurrection of learning, if the latter historians of the Roman common-wealth, and the first

of the fucceeding monarchy, had come down to us entire? The few that are come down, tho broken and imperfect, compose the best body of history that we have, nay the only body of ancient history that deserves to be an object of study. It fails us indeed most at that remarkable and fatal period, where our reasonable curiosity is raised the highest. LIVY employed five-and-forty books to bring his hiftory down to the end of the fixth century, and the breaking out of the third Punic war: but he employed ninety-five to bring it down from thence to the death of Drusus; that is, through the course of one hundred and twenty or thirty years. APIAN, DION Cassius and others, nay even Plutarch included, make us but poor amends for what is loft of Livy. Among all the adventitious helps by which we endeavour to fupply this loss in some degree, the best are those that we find scattered up and down in the works of Tully. His Orations particularly, and his Letters, contain many curious anecdotes and infructive reflections, concerning the intrigues and machinations that were carried on against liberty, from CATILINE'S conspiracy to CAE-SAR's. The state of the government, the constitution and temper of the several parties,

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 133 ties, and the characters of the principal perfons who figured at that time on the public stage, are to be seen there in a stronger and truer light than they would have appeared perhaps if he had writ purposely on this fubject, and even in those memorials which he somewhere promises ATTICUS to write. " Excudam aliquod Heraclidium opus, quod lateat in thefauris tuis." He would hardly have unmasked in such a work, as freely as in familiar occasional letters, Pom-PEY, CATO, BRUTUS, nay himself; the four men of Rome, on whose praises he dwelt with the greatest complacency. The age in which Livy flourished abounded with fuch materials as these: they were fresh, they were authentic; it was easy to procure them, it was fafe to employ them. How he did employ them in executing the fecond part of his defign, we may judge by his execution of the first: and, I own to your lordship, I should be glad to exchange, if it were possible, what we have of this history for what we have not. Would you not be glad, my lord, to fee, in one stupendous draught, the whole progress of that go-

vernment from liberty to servitude? the whole series of causes and effects, apparent and real, public and private? those which all men saw, and all good men lamented and

opposed at the time; and those which were fo disguised to the prejudices, to the partialities of a divided people, and even to the corruption of mankind, that many did not, and that many could pretend they did not, discern them, till it was too late to resist them? I am forry to say it, this part of the Roman story would be not only more curious and more authentic than the former, but of more immediate and more important application to the present state of Britain. But it is lost: the loss is irreparable, and your sordship will not blame me for deploring it.

III. They who fet up for fcepticism may not regret the loss of fuch an history: but this I will be bold to affert to them, that an history must be writ on this plan, and must aim at least at these perfections, or it will answer sufficiently none of the intentions of That it will not answer sufficiently hiltory. the intention I have infifted upon in these letters, that of instructing posterity by the example of former ages, is manifest: and I think it is as manifest, that an history cannot be faid even to relate faithfully, and inform us truly, that does not relate fully, and inform us of all that is necessary to make a truc

# Of the Study of History. 135

true judgment concerning the matters contained in it. Naked facts, without the causes that produced them and the circumstances that accompanied them, are not fufficient to characterise actions or counsels. nice degrees of wildom and of folly, of virtue and of vice, will not only be undiscoverable in them; but we must be very often unable to determine under which of these characters they fall in general. The sceptics I am speaking of are therefore guilty of this abfurdity: the nearer an history comes to the true idea of history, the better it informs and the more it instructs us, the more worthy to be rejected it appears to them. I have faid and allowed enough to content any reafonable man about the uncertainty of history. I have owned that the best are defective, and I will add in this place an observation which did not, I think, occur to me before. Conjecture is not always diffinguished perhaps as it ought to be; fo that an ingenious writer may fometimes do very innocently, what a malicious writer does very criminally as often as he dares, and as his malice requires it; he may account for events after they have happened, by a fystem of causes and conduct that did not really produce them, tho it might poffibly or even probably have produced them. But 14

this observation, like several others, becomes a reason for examining and comparing authorities, and for preferring some, not for rejecting all. DAVILA, a noble historian furely, and one whom I should not scruple to confess equal in many respects to Livy, as I should not scruple to prefer his countryman Guicciardin to Thucydides in every respect: Davila, my lord, was accused, from the first publication of his history, or at least was suspected, of too much refinement and fubtilty, in developing the fecret motives of actions, in laying the causes of events too deep, and deducing them often thro a series of progression too complicated, and too artiftly wrought. But yet the fuspicious person who should reject this historian upon such general inducements as thefe, would have no grace to oppose his fuspicions to the authority of the first duke of Epernon, who had been an actor, and a principal actor too, in many of the scenes that DAVILA recites. GIRARD, fecretary to this duke, and no contemptible biographer, relates, that this history came down to the place where the old man refided in Gascony, a little before his death; that he red it to him, that the duke confirmed the truth of the narrations in it, and feemed only furprifed by what means the author

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 137 could be so well informed of the most secret councils and measures of those times.

IV. I HAVE faid enough on this head. and your lordship may be induced perhaps, by what I have faid, to think with me, that fuch histories as these, whether ancient or modern, deserve alone to be studied. Let us leave the credulous learned to write history without materials, or to study those who do so; to wrangle about ancient traditions, and to ring different changes on the same set of bells. Let us leave the sceptics, in modern as well as ancient history. to triumph in the notable discovery of the ides of one month mistaken for the calends of another, or in the various dates and contradictory circumstances which they find in weekly gazettes and monthly mercuries. Whilft they are thus employed, your lordship and I will proceed, if you please, to confider more closely, than we have yet done, the rule mentioned above; that I mean of using discernment and choice in the study of the most authentic history, that of not wandering in the light, which is as necesfary as that of not groping in the dark.

MAN is the subject of every history; and to know him well, we must see him and

and confider him, as hiftory alone can prefent him to us, in every age, in every country, in every state, in life and in death. History therefore of all kinds, of civilized and uncivilized, of ancient and modern nations, in short of all history, that descends to a fufficient detail of human actions and characters, is useful to bring us acquainted with our species, nay with ourselves. To teach and to inculcate the general principles of virtue, and the general rules of wifdom and good policy, which refult from fuch details of actions and characters, comes for the most part, and always should come, expresly and directly into the defign of those who are capable of giving such details: and therefore whilft they narrate as historians, they hint often as philosophers; they put into our hands, as it were, on every proper occasion, the end of a clue, that ferves to remind us of fearching, and to guide us in the fearch of that truth which the example before us either establishes or illustrates. If a writer neglects this part, we are able however to supply his neglect by our own attention and industry: and when he gives us a good history of Peruvians or Mexicans, of Chinese or Tartars, of Muscovites or Negroes, we may blame him, but

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 139 but we must blame ourselves much more, if we do not make it a good lesson of philosophy. This being the general use of hiflory, it is not to be neglected. Every one may make it, who is able to read and to reflect on what he reads: and every one who makes it will find, in his degree, the benefit that arises from an early acquaintance contracted in this manner with mankind. We are not only passengers or sojourners in this world, but we are absolute strangers at the first steps we make in it. Our guides are often ignorant, often unfaithful. By this map of the country, which history spreads before us, we may learn, if we please, to guide ourselves. In our journey through it, we are befet on every We are besieged sometimes even in our strongest holds. Terrors and temptations, conducted by the passions of other men, affault us: and our own paffions, that correspond with these, betray us. History is a collection of the journals of those who have travelled through the fame country, and been exposed to the same accidents: and their good and their ill fuccess are equally instructive. In this pursuit of knowledge an immense field is opened to us: general histories, facred and prophane; the histories of particular countries, parti-

cular

cular events, particular orders, particular men; memorials, anecdotes, travels. But we must not ramble in this field without discernment or choice, nor even with these must we ramble too long,

As to the choice of authors, who have writ on all these various subjects, so much has been faid by learned men concerning all those that deserve attention, and their several characters are fo well established, that it would be a fort of pedantic affectation to lead your lordship through so voluminous, and at the same time so easy, a detail. I pass it over therefore in order to observe, that as foon as we have taken this general view of mankind, and of the course of human affairs in different ages and different parts of the world, we ought to apply, and, the shortness of human life considered, to confine ourselves almost entirely, in our study of history, to such histories as have an immediate relation to our professions, or to our rank and fituation in the fociety to which we belong. Let me instance in the profession of divinity, as the noblest and the most important.

(1) I HAVE faid so much concerning the share which divines of all religions have taken

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 141 in the corruption of history, that I should have anathemas pronounced against me, no doubt, in the east and the west, by the dairo, the mufti, and the pope, if thefe letters were submitted to ecclesiastical cenfure; for furely, my lord, the clergy have a better title, than the fons of Apollo, to be called " genus irritabile vatum." What would it be, if I went about to shew, how many of the christian clergy abuse, by misrepresentation and false quotation, the history they can no longer corrupt? And yet this task would not be, even to me, an hard one. But as I mean to speak in this place of christian divines alone, so I mean to fpeak of fuch of them particularly as may be called divines without any fneer: of fuch of them, for some such I think there are, as believe themselves, and would have mankind believe; not for temporal but spiritual interest, not for the sake of the clergy, but for the fake of mankind. Now it has been long matter of aftonishment to me, how fuch persons as these could take fo much filly pains to establish mystery on metaphysics, revelation on philosophy, and matters of fact on abstract reasoning? A religion founded on the authority of a divine mission, confirmed by prophesies and miracles, appeals to facts: and the facts must be

be proved as all other facts that pass for autthentic are proved; for faith, fo reasonable after this proof, is abfurd before it. If they are thus proved, the religion will prevail without the affiftance of fo much profound reasoning: if they are not thus proved, the authority of it will fink in the world even with this affistance. The divines object in their disputes with atheists, and they object very justly, that these men require improper proofs; proofs that are not fuited to the nature of the subject, and then cavil that fuch proofs are not furnished. But what then do they mean, to fall into the same absurdity themselves in their disputes with theifts, and to din improper proofs in ears that are open to proper proofs? The matter is of great moment, my lord, and I make no excuse for the zeal which obliges me to dwell a little on it. A ferious and honest application to the study of ecclesiastical history, and every part of prophane history and chronology relative to it, is incumbent on such reverend persons as are here spoken of, on a double account: because history alone can furnish the proper proofs, that the religion they teach is of God; and because the unfair manner, in which these proofs have been and are daily furnished, creates prejudices, and give advantages

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 143 vantages against christianity that require to be removed. No scholar will dare to deny, that false history, as well as sham miracles, has been employed to propagate christianity formerly: and whoever examines the writers of our own age will find the same abuse of history continued. Many and many instances of this abuse might be produced. It is grown into custom, writers copy one another, and the mistake that was committed, or the falshood that was invented by one, is adopted by hundreds.

ABBADIE fays in his famous book, that the gospel of St. MATTHEW is cited by CLEMENS bishop of Rome, a disciple of the Apostles; that BARNABAS cites it in his epiftle; that IGNATIUS and POLYCARPE receive it; and that the same fathers, that give testimony for MATTHEW, give it likewife for Mark. Nay your lordship will find, I believe, that the present bishop of London, in his third pastoral letter, speaks to the same effect. I will not trouble you nor myfelf with any more instances of the fame kind. Let this, which occured to me as I was writing, fuffice. It may well fuffice; for I prefume the fact advanced by the minister and the bishop is a mistake. If the fathers of the first century do men-

tion some passages that are agreeable to what we read in our evangelists, will it follow that these fathers had the same gospels before them? To fay so is a manifest abuse of history, and quite inexcusable in writers that knew, or should have known, that these fathers made use of other gospels, wherein fuch passages might be contained, or they might be preferved in unwritten tradition. Besides which I could almost venture to affirm that these fathers of the first century do not expresly name the gospels we have of Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John. To the two reasons that have been given why those who make divinity their profession should study history, particularly ecclefiaftical history, with an honest and ferious application; in order to fupport christianity against the attacks of unbelievers, and to remove the doubts and prejudices that the unfair proceedings of men of their own order have raifed in minds candid but not implicit, willing to be informed but curious to examine; to these, I fay, we may add another confideration that feems to me of no small importance. Writers of the Roman religion have attempted to shew, that the text of the holy writ is on many accounts infufficient to be the fole criterion of orthodoxy: I apprehend too

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 145 that they have shewn it. Sure I am that experience, from the first promulgation of christianity to this hour, shews abundantly with how much eafe and fuccess the most opposite, the most extravagant, nay the most impious opinions, and the most contradictory faiths, may be founded on the fame text, and plaufibly defended by the fame authority. Writers of the reformed religion have erected their batteries against tradition; and the only difficulty they had to encounter in this enterprise lay in levelling and pointing their cannon fo as to avoid demolishing, in one common ruin, the traditions they retain, and those they reject. Each fide has been employed to weaken the cause and explode the system of his adversary: and, whilst they have been fo employed, they have jointly laid their axes to the root of christianity: for thus men will be apt to reason upon what they have advanced. "If the text has not " that authenticity, clearness, and preci-" fion which are necessary to establish it as " a divine and a certain rule of faith and repractice; and if the tradition of the " church, from the first ages of it till the " days of LUTHER and CALVIN, has been " corrupted itself, and has served to cor-" rupt the faith and practice of christians; " there

"there remains at this time no standard " at all of christianity. By consequence " either this religion was not originally of " divine institution, or else God has not " provided effectually for preferving the genuine purity of it, and the gates of " hell have actually prevailed, in con-" tradiction to his promife, against the " church." The best effect of this reasoning that can be hoped for, is, that men should fall into theism, and subscribe to the first proposition: he must be worse than an atheist who can affirm the last. The dilemma is terrible, my lord. Party-zeal and private interest have formed it: the common interest of christianity is deeply concerned to folve it. Now, I prefume, it can never be folved without a more accurate examination, not only of the christian but of the jewish system, than learned men have been hitherto impartial enough and fagacious enough to take, or honest enough to communicate. Whilft the authenticity and fense of the text of the Bible remain as disputable, and whilft the tradition of the church remains as problematical, to fay no worse, as the immense labors of the christian divines in several communions have made them appear to be; christianity may lean on the civil and ecclefiaftical power, and

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 147 and be supported by the forcible influence of education: but the proper force of religion, that force which subdues the mind and awes the conscience by conviction, will be wanting,

I HAD reason therefore to produce divinity, as one instance of those professions that require a particular application to the study of some particular parts of history: and fince I have faid fo much on the subject in my zeal for christianity, I will add this further. The refurrection of letters was a fatal period: the christian system has been attacked, and wounded too, very feverely fince that time. The defence has been better made indeed by modern divines, than it had been by antient fathers and apologists. The moderns have invented new methods of defence, and have abandoned fome posts that were not tenable: but still there are others, in defending which they lie under great disadvantages. Such are various facts, piously believed in former times, but on which the truth of christianity has been refled very imprudently in more enlightened ages; because the falfity of some, and the gross improbality of others are so evident, that, instead of answering the purpose for which they K 2

were invented, they have rendered the whole tenor of ecclefiaftical hiftory and tradition precarious, ever fince a ftrict but just application of the rules of criticism has been made to them. I touch these things lightly; but if your lordship reflects upon them, you will find reason perhaps to think as I do, that it is high time the clergy in all christian communions should join their forces, and establish those historical facts, which are the foundations of the whole fyftem, on clear and unquestionable historical authority, fuch as they require in all cases of moment from others; reject candidly what cannot be thus established; and pursue their enquiries in the fame spirit of truth through all the ages of the church; without any regard to historians, fathers, or councils, more than they are strictly entitled to on the face of what they have tranfmitted to us on their own confiftency, and on the concurrence of other authority. Our pastors would be thus, I presume, much better employed than they generally Those of the clergy who make religion merely a trade, who regard nothing more than the subsistence it affords them, or in higher life the wealth and power they enjoy by the means of it, may fay to themfelves, that it will last their time, or that policy

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 140 policy and reason of state will preserve the form of a church when the spirit of religion is extinct. But those whom I mentioned above, those who act for spiritual not temporal ends, and are defirous that men should believe and practife the doctrines of christianity, as well as go to church and pay tithes, will feel and own the weight of fuch confiderations as these; and agree, that however the people have been, and may be ftill amused, yet christianity has been in decay ever fince the refurrection of letters; and that it cannot be supported as it was supported before that aera, nor by any other way than that which I propose, and which a due application to the study of history, chronology, and criticism, would enable our divines to purfue, no doubt, with fuccess.

I MIGHT instance, in other professions, the obligation men lie under of applying themselves to certain parts of history, and I can hardly forbear doing it in that of the law; in it's nature the noblest and most beneficial to mankind, in it's abuse and debasement the most fordid and the most pernicious. A lawyer now is nothing more, I speak of ninety-nine in an hundred at least, to use some of Tully's words, "nisi leguleius qui-

" dam cautus, et acutus praeco actionum, " cantor formularum, auceps fyllabarum." But there have been lawyers that were orators, philosophers, historians: there have been BACONS and CLARENDONS, my lord. There will be none fuch any more, till, in fome better age, true ambition or the love of fame prevails over avarice; and till men find leifure and encouragement to prepare themselves for the exercise of this profession, by climbing up to the "vantage ground," fo my lord BACON calls it, of science: instead of groveling all their lives below, in a mean but gainful application to all the little arts Till this happen, the profesof chicane. fion of the law will scarce deserve to be ranked among the learned professions: and whenever it happens, one of the vantage grounds, to which men must climb, is metaphyfical, and the other, historical knowledge. They must pry into the secret recesses of the human heart, and become well acquainted with the whole moral world, that they may discover the abstract reason of all laws: and they must trace the laws of particular states, especially of their own, from the first rough sketches to the more perfect draughts; from the first causes or occafions that produced them, through all the effects, good and bad, that they produced.

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 151 But I am running infensibly into a subject, which would detain me too long from one that relates more immediately to your lordship, and with which I intend to conclude this long letter.

(2) I PASS from the confideration of those professions to which particular parts or kinds of history seem to belong: and I come to speak of the study of history, as a necessary mean to prepare men for the difcharge of that duty which they owe to their country, and which is common to all the members of every fociety that is constituted according to the rules of right reason, and with a due regard to the common good. 1 have met, in ST. REAL's works, or some other French book, with a ridicule cast on private men who make history a political study, or who apply themselves in any manner to affairs of state. But the reflection is too general. In governments fo arbitrary by their constitution, that the will of the prince is not only the supreme but the fole law, it is so far from being a duty that it may be dangerous, and must be impertinent in men, who are not called by the prince to the administration of public affairs, to concern themselves about it, or to fit themselves for it. The sole vocation there

there is the favour of the court; and whatever defignation God makes by the talents he bestows, tho it may serve, which it seldom ever does, to direct the choice of the prince, yet I presume that it cannot become a reason to particular men, or create a duty on them, to devote themselves to the public fervice. Look on the Turkish government. See a fellow taken, from rowing in a common passage-boat, by the caprice of the prince: fee him invested next day with all the power the foldans took under the caliphs, or the mayors of the palace under the fuccessors of CLOVIS: see a whole empire governed by the ignorance, inexperience, and arbitrary will of this tyrant, and a few other subordinate tyrants, as ignorant and unexperienced as himself. France indeed, tho an absolute government, things go a little better. Arts and sciences are encouraged, and here and there an example may be found of a man who has rifen by fome extraordinary talents, amidst innumerable examples of men who have arrived at the greatest honors and highest posts by no other merit than that of affiduous fawning, attendances, or of skill in some despicable puerile amusement; in training wasps, for instance, to take regular flights like hawks, and stoop at flies. The nobi-

#### Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 153 lity of France, like the children of tribute among the ancient Saracens and modern Turks, are fet apart for wars. They are bred to make love, to hunt, and to fight: and, if any of them should acquire knowledge fuperior to this, they would acquire that which might be prejudicial to themfelves, but could not become beneficial to The affairs of state are their country. trusted to other hands. Some have rifen to them by drudging long in bufiness: some have been made ministers almost in the cradle: and the whole power of the government has been abandoned to others in the dotage of life. There is a monarchy, an absolute monarchy too, I mean that of China, wherein the administration of the government is carried on, under the direction of the prince, ever fince the dominion of the Tartars has been established, by several classes of Mandarins, and according to the deliberation and advice of feveral orders of councils: the admission to which classes and orders depends on the abilities of the candidates, as their rise in them depends on the behaviour they hold, and the improvements they make afterwards. Under fuch a government, it is neither impertinent nor

ridiculous, in any of the subjects who are invited by their circumstances, or pushed

to it by their talents, to make the history of their own and of other countries a political study, and to fit themselves by this and all other ways for the fervice of the public. It is not dangerous neither; or an honor, that outweighs the danger, attends it: fince private men have a right by the ancient constitution of this government, as well as councils of state, to represent to the prince the abuses of his administration. But still men have not there the fame occasion to concern themselves in the affairs of the state. as the nature of a free government gives to the members of it. In our own country, for in our own the forms of a free government at least are hitherto preserved, men are not only defigned for the public fervice by the circumstances of their situation, and their talents, all which may happen in others: but they are designed to it by their birth in many cases, and in all cases they may dedicate themselves to this service, and take, in different degrees, some share in it, whether they are called to it by the prince or no. In absolute governments, all public fervice is to the prince, and he nominates all those that serve the public, In free governments, there is a distinct and a principal fervice due to the state. Even the king, of fuch a limited monarchy as ours, is but

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 155 the first servant of the people. Among his lubjects, some are appointed by the constitution, and others are elected by the people, to carry on the exercise of the legislative power jointly with him, and to controul the executive power independently on him. Thus your lordship is born a member of that order of men, in whom a third part of the supreme power of the government relides: and your right to the exercise of the power belonging to this order not being yet opened, you are chosen into another body of men, who have different power and a different constitution, but who possess another third part of the supreme legislative authority, for as long a time as the commission or trust delegated to them by the people lasts. Free-men, who are neither born to the first, nor elected to the last, have a right however to complain, to represent, to petition, and, I add, even to do more in cases of the utmost extremity. For fure there cannot be a greater absurdity, than to affirm, that the people have a remedy in reliftance, when their prince attempts to enflave them; but that they have none, when their representatives fell themselves and them.

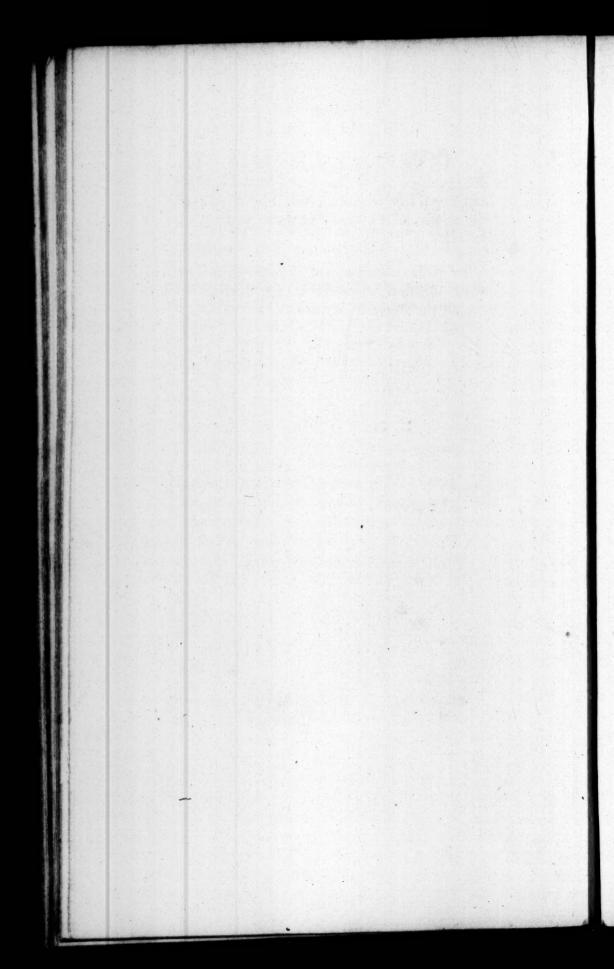
THE fum of what I have been faying is, that, in free governments, the public fervice

is not confined to those whom the prince appoints to different posts in the administration under him; that there the care of the state is the care of multitudes; that many are called to it in a particular manner by their rank, and by other circumstances of their fituation; and that even those whom the prince appoints are not only answerable to him, but like him, and before him, to the nation, for their behaviour in their feveral posts. It can never be impertinent nor ridiculous therefore in fuch a country, whatever it might be in the abbot of ST. REAL's, which was Savoy I think; or in Peru, under the Incas, where, GARCILASSO DE LA VEGA fays, it was lawful for none but the nobility to fludy—for men of all degrees to instruct themselves in those affairs wherein they may be actors, or judges of those that act, or controulers of those that judge. On the contrary, it is incumbent on every man to instruct himself, as well as the means and opportunities he has permit, concerning the nature and interests of the government, and those rights and duties that belong to him, or to his superiors, or to his inferiors. This in general; but in particular, it is certain that the obligations under which we lie to ferve our country increase, in proportion to the ranks we hold, and the other circum**ftances** 

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 157 stances of birth, fortune, and situation that call us to this service; and, above all, to the talents which God has given us to perform it.

It is in this view, that I shall address to your lordship whatever I have further to say on the study of history.

LET-



From what period modern history is peculiarly useful to the service of our country, viz.

From the end of the fifteenth century to the prefent.

The division of this into three particular periods:

In order to a sketch of the history and state of Europe from that time.

Since then you are, my lord, by your birth, by the nature of our government, and by the talents God has given you, attached for life to the fervice of your country; fince genius alone cannot enable you to go through this fervice with honor to yourfelf and advantage to your country, whether you support or whether you oppose the administrations that arise; fince a great

a great stock of knowledge, acquired betimes and continually improved, is necesfary to this end; and fince one part of this stock must be collected from the study of history, as the other part is to be gained by observation and experience; I come now to fpeak to your lordship of fuch history as has an immediate relation to the great duty and business of your life, and of the method to be observed in this study. The notes I have by me, which were of fome little use thus far, ferve me no farther, and I have no books to confult. No matter; I shall be able to explain my thoughts without their affiftance, and less liable to be tedious. I hope to be as full and as exact on memory alone, as the manner in which I shall treat the subject requires me to be.

I say then, that however closely affairs are linked together in the progression of governments, and how much soever events that follow are dependent on those that precede, the whole connexion diminishes to sight as the chain lengthens; till at last it seems to be broken, and the links that are continued from that point bear no proportion nor any similitude to the former. I would not be understood to speak only of those great changes, that are wrought by a

con-

Of the STUDY of HISTORY, 161 concurrence of extraordinary events; for instance the expulsion of one nation, the destruction of one government, and the establishment of another: but even of those that are wrought in the fame governments and among the fame people, flowly and almost imperceptibly, by the necessary effects of time, and flux condition of human affairs. When fuch changes as these happen in feveral states about the same time, and consequently affect other states by their vicinity, and by many different relations which they frequently bear to one another; then is one of those periods formed, at which the chain spoken of is so broken as to have little or no real or visible connexion with that which we fee continue. A new fituation, different from the former, begets new interests in the same proportion of difference; not in this or that particular state alone, but in all those that are concerned by vicinity or other relations, as I faid just now, in one general fystem of policy. New interests beget new maxims of government, and new methods of conduct. Thefe, in their turns, beget new manners, new habits, new customs. The longer this new constitution of affairs continues, the more will this difference increase: and altho some analogy may remain long between what pre-

preceded and what fucceeded fuch a period, yet will this analogy foon become an object of mere curiofity, not of profitable enquiry. Such a period therefore is, in the true fense of the words, an epocha or an aera, a point of time at which you ftop, or from which you reckon forward. I say forward; because we are not to study in the present case, as chronologers compute, backward. Should we perfift to carry our refearches much higher, and to push them even to some other period of the same kind, we should misemploy our time; the causes then laid having spent themselves, the series of effects derived from them being over, and our concern in both consequently at an end. But a new lystem of causes and effects, that subfifts in our time, and whereof our conduct is to be a part, arifing at the last period, and all that passes in our time being dependent on what has passed since that period, or being immediately relative to it, we are extremely concerned to be well informed about all those passages. To be entirely ignorant about the ages that precede this aera would be shameful. Nay some indulgence may be had to a temperate curiofity in the review of them. But to be learned about them is a ridiculous affectation in any man who means to be useful to the present

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 163 age. Down to this aera let us read history: from this aera, and down to our own time, let us study it.

THE end of the fifteenth century feems to be just such a period as I have been describing, for those who live in the eighteenth, and who inhabit the western parts of Europe. A little before, or a little after this point of time, all those events happened, and all those revolutions began, that have produced fo vast a change in the manners, customs, and interests of particular nations, and in the whole policy, ecclefiaftical and civil, of these parts of the world. I must descend here into fome detail, not of histories, collections, or memorials; for all these are well enough known: and tho the contents are in the heads of few, the books are in the hands of many. But instead of shewing your lordthip where to look, I shall contribute more to your entertainment and instruction, by marking out, as well as my memory will ferve me to do it, what you are to look for, and by furnishing a kind of clue to your studies. I shall give, according to custom, the first place to religion.

L2

A view

A view of the ecclefiaftical government of Europe from the beginning of the fixteenth century.

OBSERVE then, my lord, that the demolition of the papal throne was not attempted with fuccess till the beginning of the fixteenth century. If you are curious to cast your eyes back, you will find BERENGER in the eleventh, who was foon filenced; Arnoldus in the fame, who was foon hanged; VALDO in the twelfth, and our Wickliff in the fourteenth, as well as others perhaps whom I do not recollect. Sometimes the doctrines of the church were alone attacked; and fometimes the doctrine, the discipline, and the usurpations of the pope. But little fires, kindled in corners of a dark world, were foon stifled by that great abettor of christian unity, the hang-When they fpred and blazed out, as in the case of the Albigeois and of the Huslites, armies were raised to extinguish them by torrents of blood; and fuch faints as Dominic, with the crucifix in their hands, instigated the troops to the utmost barbarity. Your lordship will find that the church of Rome was maintained by fuch chariOf the STUDY of HISTORY. 165

charitable and falutary means, among others, till the period spoken of: and you will be curious, I am fure, to enquire how this period came to be more fatal to her than any former conjuncture. A multitude of circumstances, which you will easily trace in the histories of the fifteenth and fixteenth centuries, to go no further back, concurred to bring about this great event: and a multitude of others, as easy to be traced, concurred to hinder the demolition from becoming total, and to prop the tottering fabric. Among these circumstances, there is one less complicated and more obvious than others, which was of principal and universal influence. The art of printing had been invented about forty or fifty years before the period we fix: from that time, the refurrection of letters hastened on a-pace; and at this period they had made great progress, and were cultivated with great application. MAHOMET the fecond drove them out of the east into the west; and the popes proved worse politicians than the mufties in this respect. NI-CHOLAS the fifth encouraged learning and learned men. Sixtus the fourth was, if I mistake not, a great collector of books at least: and Leo the tenth was the patron of every art and science. The magicians L3 them-

themselves broke the charm by which they had bound mankind for fo many ages: and the adventure of that knight-errant, who, thinking himself happy in the arms of a celestial nymph, found that he was the miferable flave of an infernal hag, was in some fort renewed. As foon as the means of acquiring and fpreading information grew common, it is no wonder that a system was unravelled, which could not have been woven with fuccess in any ages, but those of gross ignorance, and credulous supersti-I might point out to your lordship many other immediate causes, some general like this that I have mentioned, and fome particular. The great schism, for instance, that ended in the beginning of the fifteenth century, and in the council of Constance, had occasioned prodigious scandal. Two or three vicars of Christ, two or three infallible heads of the church. roaming about the world at a time, furnished matter of ridicule as well as scandal: and whilft they appealed, for fo they did in effect, to the laity, and reproached and excommunicated one another, they taught the world what to think of the institution, as well as exercise of the papal authority. The fame lesson was taught by the council of Pifa, that preceded, and by that of Bafle,

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 167 that followed the Council of Constance. The horrid crimes of ALEXANDER the fixth, the faucy ambition of Julius the second, the immense profusion and scandalous exactions of Leo the tenth; all these events and characters, following in a continued feries from the beginning of one century, prepared the way for the revolution that happened in the beginning of the next. The state of Germany, the state of England, and that of the North, were particular causes, in these several countries, of this revolution. Such were many remarkable events that happened about the fame time, and a little before it, in these and in other nations : and fuch were likewife the characters of many of the princes of that age, some of whom favoured the reformation, like the elector of Saxony, on a principle of confcience; and most of whom favoured it, just as others opposed it, on a principle of in-This your lordship will discover manifestly to have been the case; and the fole difference you will find between HEN-RY the eighth and FRANCIS the first, one of whom separated from the pope, as the other adhered to him, is this: HENRY the eighth divided, with the fecular clergy and his people, the spoil of the pope, and his fatellites, the monks; Francis the first divided,

ed, with the pope, the spoil of his clergy; fecular and regular, and of his people. With the same impartial eye that your lordship surveys the abuses of religion, and the corruptions of the church as well as court of Rome, which brought on the reformation at this period; you will observe the characters and conduct of those who began, who propagated, and who favoured the reformation: and from your observation of these, as well as of the unsystematical manner in which it was carried on at fame time in various places, and of the want of concert, may even of charity, among the reformers, you will learn what to think of the feveral religions that unite in their opposition to the Roman, and yet hate one another most heartily; what to think of the feveral fects that have sprouted, like fuckers, from the fame great roots; and what the true principles are of protestant ecclefiaftical policy. This policy had no being till LUTHER made his establishment in Germany; till Zwinglius began another in Swifferland, which CALVIN carried on, and, like AMERICUS VESPUTIUS who followed CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS, robbed the first adventurer of his honor; and till the reformation in our country was perfect. ed under EDWARD the fixth and ELIZA-

BETH.

#### Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 169

BETH. Even popish ecclesiastical policy is no longer the same since that aera. His holiness is no longer at the head of the whole western church: and to keep the part that adheres to him, he is obliged to toosen their chains, and to lighten his voke. The spirit and pretensions of his court are the fame, but not the power. He governs by expedient and management more, and by authority less. His decrees and his briefs are in danger of being refused, explained away, or evaded, unless he negociates their acceptance before he gives them, governs in concert with his flock, and feeds his sheep according to their humor and interest. In short, his excommunications, that made the greatest emperors tremble, are despifed by the lowest members of his own communion; and the remaining attachment to him has been, from this aera, rather a political expedient to preferve an appearance of unity, than a principle of conscience; whatever some bigotted princes may have thought, whatever ambitious prelates and hireling scriblers may have taught, and whatever a people, worked up to enthusiasm by fanatical preachers, may have acted. Proofs of this would be eafy to draw, not only from the conduct of fuch princes as FERDINAND the first and MAXI-MILIAN

MILIAN the fecond, who could fcarce be esteemed papists tho they continued in the pope's communion: but even from that of princes who perfecuted their protestant subjects with great violence. Enough has been faid, I think to shew your lordship how little need there is of going up higher than the beginning of the fixteenth century in the study of history, to acquire all the knowledge necessary at this time in ecclesiastical policy, or in civil policy as far as it is relative to this. Historical monuments of this fort are in every man's hand, the facts are fufficiently verified, and the entire scenes lie open to our observation: even that scene of folemn refined banter exhibited in the council of Trent, imposes on no man who reads PAOLO, as well as PALLAVICINI, and the letters of VARGAS.

A view

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 171

A view of the civil government of Europe in the beginning of the fixteenth century.

#### I. In FRANCE.

A very little higher need we go, to obferve those great changes in the civil constitutions of the principal nations of Europe. in the partition of power among them, and by consequence in the whole system of European policy, which have operated fo strongly for more than two centuries, and which operate still. I will not affront the memory of our HENRY the seventh so much as to compare him to Lewis the eleventh: and yet I perceive some resemblance between them; which would perhaps appear greater, if PHILIP of Commines had wrote the History of HENRY as well as that of LEWIS; or if my lord BAcon had wrote that of Lewis as well as that of HENRY. This prince came to the crown of England a little before the close of the fifteenth century: and Lewis began his reign in France about twenty years fooner. These reigns make remarkable periods in the histories of both nations.

To reduce the power, privileges, and posfessions of the nobility, and to increase the wealth and authority of the crown, was the principal object of both. In this their fuccess was so great, that the constitutions of the two governments have had, fince that time, more resemblance, in name and in form than in reality, to the constitutions that prevailed before. Lewis the eleventh was the first, fay the French, "qui mit "les rois hors de page." The independency of the nobility had rendered the state of his predecessors very dependent, and their power precarious. They were the fovereigns of great vaffals; but these vaffals were fo powerful, that one of them was fometimes able, and two or three of them always, to give law to the fovereign. Before Lewis came to the crown, the English had been driven out of their posfessions in France, by the poor character of HENRY the fixth, the domestic troubles of his reign, and the defection of the house of Burgundy from his alliance, much more than by the ability of CHARLES the feventh, who feems to have been neither a greater hero nor a greater politician than HENRY the fixth; and even than by the vigor and union of the French nobility in his

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 173 his service. After Lewis came to the crown, EDWARD the fourth made a shew of carrying the war again into France; but he foon returned home, and your lordship will not be at a loss to find much better reasons for his doing so, in the situation of his affairs and the characters of his allies. than those which PHILIP of Commines draws from the artifice of Lewis, from his good cheer, and his pensions. Now from this time our pretentions on France were in effect given up: and CHARLES the bold, the last prince of the house of Burgundy, being killed, Lewis had no vaffal able to molest him. He re-united the dutchy of Burgundy and Artois to his crown, he acquired Provence by gift, and his fon Britany by marriage: and thus France grew, in the course of a few years, into that great and compact body which we behold at this The Hiftory of France before this period, is like that of Germany, a complicated history of several states and several interests; sometimes concurring like members of the fame monarchy, and fometimes warring on one another. Since this period, the hiftory of France is the hiftory of one state under a more uniform and orderly government; the history of a monarchy where-

wherein the prince is possessor of some, as well as lord of all the great fieffes: and, the authority of many tyrants centering in one, tho the people are not become more free, yet the whole fystem of domestic policy is entirely changed. Peace at home is better fecured, and the nation grown fitter to carry war abroad. The governors of great provinces and of ftrong fortreffes have opposed their king, and taken arms against his authority and commission since that time: but yet there is no more refemblance between the authority and pretenfions of these governors, or the nature and occasions of these disputes, and the authority and pretenfions of the vaffals of the crown in former days, or the nature and occasions of their disputes with the prince and with one another, than there is between the antient and the present peers of France. In a word, the constitution is so altered, that any knowledge we can acquire about it, in the history that precedes this period. will ferve to little purpose in our study of the history that follows it, and to less purpose still in affisting us to judge of what passes in the present age. The kings of France fince that time, more mafters at home, have been able to exert themselves more

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 175

more abroad: and they began to do fo immediately; for CHARLES the eighth, fon and fuccessor of Lewis the eleventh, formed great defigns of foreign conquests, tho they were disappointed by his inability, by the levity of the nation, and by other causes. Lewis the twelfth and Francis the first, but especially Francis, meddled deep in the affairs of Europe: and tho the fuperior genius of FERDINAND called the catholic, and the star of CHARLES the fifth prevailed against them, yet the efforts they made shew sufficiently how the strength and importance of this monarchy were increased in their time. From whence we may date likewife the rivalship of the house of France, for we may reckon that of Valois and that of Bourbon as one upon this occafion, and the house of Austria; that continues at this day, and that has cost fo much blood and fo much treasure in the course of it.

orran salkav i dom hanada sarad

may to tempel oil the tempelor

# II. In ENGLAND.

Tho the power and influence of the nobility funk in the great change that began under HENRY the seventh in England, as they did in that which began under LEWIS the eleventh in France; yet the new constitutions that these changes produced were very different. In France the lords alone loft, the king alone gained; the clergy held their possessions and their immunities, and the people remained in a state of mitigated flavery. But in England the people gained as well as the crown. The commons had already a share in the legislature; to that the power and influence of the lords being broke by HENRY the feventh, and the property of the commons increasing by the fale that his fon made of churchlands, the power of the latter increased of course by this change in a constitution, the forms whereof were favorable to them. The union of the roses put an end to the civil wars of York and Lancaster, that had fucceeded those we commonly call the barons wars, and the humor of warring in France,

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 177 France, that had lafted near four hundred years under the Normans and Plantagenets, for plunder as well as conquest was spent. Our temple of Janus was shut by HENRY the feventh. We neither laid waste our own nor other countries any longer: and wife laws and a wife government changed infenfibly the manners, and gave a new turn to the spirit of our people. We were no longer the free-booters we had been. Our nation maintained her reputation in arms whenever the public interest or the public authority required it; but war ceafed to be, what it had been, our principal and almost our sole profession. The arts of peace prevailed among us. We became husbandmen, manufacturers, and merchants, and we emulated neighbouring nations in literature. It is from this time that we ought to study the history of our country, my lord, with the utmost application. We are not much concerned to know with critical accuracy what were the ancient forms of our parliaments, concerning which, however, there is little room for dispute from the reign of HENRY the third at least; nor in short the whole system of our civil constitution before HENRY the feventh, and of our ecclefiaftical con-Stitu-

stitution before HENRY the eighth. But he who has not studied and acquired a thorough knowledge of them both, from these periods down to the prefent time, in all the variety of events by which they have been affected, will be very unfit to judge or to take care of either. Just as little are we concerned to know, in any nice detail, what the conduct of our princes, relatively to their neighbours on the continent, was before this period, and at a time when the partition of power and a multitude of other circumstances rendered the whole political system of Europe so vastly different from that which has existed since. But he who has not traced this conduct from the period we fix, down to the present age, wants a principal part of the knowledge that every English minifter of state should have. Ignorance in the respects here spoken of is the less pardonable, because we have more, and more authentic, means of information concerning this, than concerning any other period. Anecdotes enow to glut the curiofity of some persons, and to silence all the captious cavils of others, will never be furnished by any portion of history; nor indeed can they according to the nature and courfe

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 179 course of human affairs: but he who is content to read and observe, like a senator and a statesman, will find in our own and in foreign hiftorians as much information as he wants, concerning the affairs of our island, her fortune at home and her conduct abroad, from the fifteenth century to the eighteenth. I refer to foreign historians, as well as to our own, for this feries of our own history; not only because it is reafonable to fee in what manner the hiftorians of other countries have related the transactions wherein we have been concerned, and what judgment they have made of our conduct, domestic and foreign, but for another reason likewise. Our nation has furnished as ample and as important matter, good and bad, for history, as any nation under the fun : and yet we must yield the palm in writing history most certainly to the Italians and to the French. and, I fear, even to the Germans. The only two pieces of history we have, in any respect to be compared with the antient, are, the reign of HENRY the feventh by my lord Bacon, and the History of our civil war in the last century by your noble ancestor my lord chancellor CLAREN-DON. But we have no general history to M2 be

be compared with foine of other countries: neither have we, which I lament much more, particular histories, except the two I have mentioned, nor writers of memorials, nor collectors of monuments and anecdotes, to vie in number or in merit with those that foreign nations can boast; from Commines, Guicciardin, Du Bel-LAY, PAOLO, DAVILA, THUANUS, and a multitude of others, down through the whole period that I propose to your lordship. But altho this be true, to our shame; yet it is true likewise that we want no necessary means of information. They lie open to our industry and our discernment. Foreign writers are for the most part scarce worth reading when they speak of our domestic affairs: nor are our English writers for the most part of greater value when they speak of foreign affairs. In this mutual defect, the writers of other countries are, I think, more excusable than ours: for the nature of our government, the political principles in which we are bred, our distinct interests as islanders, and the complicated various interests and humors of our parties, all these are so peculiar to ourfelves, and fo different from the notions, manners, and habits of other nations, that

Of the STUDY of HISTORY, 181 it is not wonderful they should be puzzled or should fall into error, when they under-take to give relations of events that result from all these, or to pass any judgment upon them. But as these historians are mutually defective, fo they mutually supply each other's defects. We must compare them therefore, make use of our discernment, and draw our conclusions from both. If we proceed in this manner, we have an ample fund of history in our power, from whence to collect sufficient authentic information; and we must proceed in this manner, even with our own historians of different religions, fects, and parties, or run the risque of being misled by domestic ignorance and prejudice in this case, as well as by foreign ignorance and prejudice in the other.

M 3

III

# III. In SPAIN and the Empire.

Spain figured little in Europe till the latter part of the fifteenth century; till Castile and Arragon were united by the marriage of FERDINAND and ISABELLA; till the total expulsion of the Moors, and till the difcovery of the West-Indies. After this, not only Spain took a new form, and grew into immense power; but, the heir of FERDI-NAND and ISABELLA being heir likewise of the houses of Burgundy and Austria, such an extent of dominion accrued to him by all these successions, and such an addition of rank and authority by his election to the empire, as no prince had been mafter of in Europe from the days of CHARLES the great. It is proper to observe here how the policy of the Germans altered in the choice of an emperor, because the effects of this alteration have been great. When RODOLPHUS of Hapfburg was chose in the year one thousand two hundred and seventy, or about that time, the poverty and the low estate of this prince, who had been marshal of the court to a king of Bohemia, The difwas an inducement to elect him. orderly

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 183 orderly and lawless state of the empire made the princes of it in those days unwilling to have a more powerful head. But a contrary maxim took place at this aera: CHARLES the fifth and FRANCIS the first, the two most powerful princes of Europe, were the fole candidates; for the elector of Saxony, who is faid to have declined, was rather unable to ftand in competition with them: and CHARLES was chosen by the unanimous fuffrages of the electoral college if I mistake not. Another CHARLES, CHARLES the fourth, who was made emperor illegally enough on the deposition of Lewis of Bavaria, and about one hundred and fifty years before, feems to me to have contributed doubly to establish this maxim; by the wife constitutions that he procured to pass, that united the empire in a more orderly form and better fystem of government; and by alienating the imperial revenues to fuch a degree, that they were no longer sufficient to support an emperor who had not great revenues of his own. The fame maxim and other circumstances have concurred to keep the empire in this family ever fince, as it had been often before; and this family having large dominions in the empire, and larger pretentions, as M4

well as dominions, out of it, the other states of Europe, France, Spain and England particularly, have been more concerned since this period in the affairs of Germany, than they were before it: and by consequence the history of Germany, from the beginning of the sixteenth century, is of importance, and a necessary part of that knowledge which your lordship desires to acquire.

THE Dutch commonwealth was not formed till near a century later, But as soon as it was formed, nay even whilst it was forming, these provinces, that were lost to observation among the many that composed the dominions of Burgundy and Austria, became so considerable a part of the political system of Europe, that their history must be studied by every man who would inform himself of this system.

Soon after this state had taken being, others of a more antient original began to mingle in those disputes and wars, those councils, negociations, and treaties, that are to be the principal objects of your lord-ship's application in the study of history. That of the northern crowns deserves your attention little, before the last century.

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 185 Till the election of FREDERIC the first to the crown of Denmark, and till that wonderful revolution which the first Gustavus brought about in Sweden, it is nothing more than a confused rhapsody of events, in which the great kingdoms and states of Europe neither had any concern, nor took any part. From the time I have mentioned, the northern crowns have turned their counsels and their arms often southwards, and Sweden particularly, with prodigious effect.

To what purpose should I trouble your lordship with the mention of histories of other nations? they are either fuch as have no relation to the knowledge you would acquire, like that of the Poles, the Muscovites, or the Turks; or they are such as, having an occasional or a secondary relation to it, fall of course into your scheme; like the history of Italy for instance, which is sometimes a part of that of France, fometimes of that of Spain, and fometimes of that of Germany. The thread of hiftory, that you are to keep, is that of the nations who are and must always be concerned in the fame scenes of action with your own. These are the principal nations of

the west. Things that have no immediate relation to your own country, or to them, are either too remote, or too minute, to employ much of your time: and their history and your own is, for all your purposes, the whole history of Europe.

THE two great powers, that of France and that of Austria, being formed, and a rivalship established by consequence between them; it began to be the interest of their neighbours to oppose the strongest and most enterprising of the two, and to be the ally and friend of the weakest. From hence arose the notion of a balance of power in Europe, on the equal poize of which the fafety and tranquility of all must depend. To destroy the equality of this balance has been the aim of each of these rivals in his turn: and to hinder it from being destroyed, by preventing too much power from falling into one scale, has been the principle of all the wife councils of Europe, relative to France and to the house of Austria, through the whole period that began at the aera we have fixed, and subsists at this hour. To make a careful and just observation, therefore, of the rife and decline of these powers, in the

Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 187 two last centuries and in the present; of the projects which their ambition formed; of the means they employed to carry these projects on with fuccess; of the means employed by others to defeat them; of the iffue of all these endeavours in war and in negociation; and particularly, to bring your observations home to your own country and your own use, of the conduct that England held, to her honor or dishonor, to her advantage or disadvantage, in every one of the numerous and important conjunctures that happened—ought to be the principal subject of your lordship's attention in reading and reflecting on this part of modern history.

Now to this purpose you will find it of great use, my lord, when you have a general plan of the history in your mind, to go over the whole again in another method; which I propose to be this. Divide the entire period into such particular periods as the general course of affairs will mark out to you sufficiently, by the rise of new conjunctures, of different schemes of conduct, and of different theatres of action. Examine this period of history as you would examine

examine a tragedy or a comedy; that is, take first the idea or a general notion of the whole, and after that examine every act and every scene apart. Consider them in themselves, and consider them relatively to one another. Read this history as you would that of any antient period; but study it afterwards, as it would not be worth your while to fludy the other; nay as you could not have in your power the means of studying the other, if the study was really worth your while. The former part of this period abounds in great historians: and the latter part is fo modern, that even tradition is authentic enough to supply the want of good history, if we are curious to enquire, and if we hearken to the living with the same impartiality and freedom of judgment as we read the dead: and he that does one will do the other. The whole period abounds in memorials, in collections of public acts and monuments of private letters, and of treaties. All these must come into your plan of fludy, my lord: many not to be red through, but all to be consulted and compared. They must not lead you, I think, to your enquiries, but your enquiries must lead you to them. By joining history and that which we call the mate-

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 189

materia historica together in this manner, and by drawing your information from both, your lordship will acquire not only that knowledge, which many have in some degree, of the great transactions that have paffed, and the great events that have happened in Europe during this period, and of their immediate and obvious causes and consequences; but your lordship will acquire a much fuperior knowledge, and fuch a one as very few men possess almost in any degree, a knowledge of the true political fystem of Europe during this time. You will fee it in it's primitive principles, in the constitutions of governments, the situations of countries, their national and true interests, the characters and the religion of people, and other permanent circumstances. You will trace it through all its fluctuations, and observe how the objects vary seldom. but the means perpetually, according to the different characters of princes and of those who govern; the different abilities of those who serve; the course of accidents, and a multitude of other irregular and contingent circumstances.

THE particular periods into which the whole period should be divided, in my opinion,

opinion, are these. 1. From the fifteenth to the end of the sixteenth century. 2. From thence to the Pyrenean treaty. 3. From thence down to the present time.

Your lordship will find this division as apt and as proper, relatively to the particular histories of England, France, Spain, and Germany, the principal nations concerned, as it is relatively to the general history of Europe.

THE death of queen ELIZABETH, and the accession of king James the first, made a vast alteration in the government of our nation at home, and in her conduct abroad. about the end of the first of these periods. The wars that religion occasioned, and ambition fomented in France, through the reigns of Francis the fecond, Charles the ninth, HENRY the third, and a part of HENRY the fourth, ended: and the furies of the league were crushed by this great prince, about the same time. PHILIP the lecond of Spain marks this period likewise by his death, and by the exhausted condition in which he left the monarchy he governed: which took the lead no longer in diffurbing the peace of mankind, but acted

# Of the STUDY of HISTORY. 191

a fecond part in abetting the bigotry and ambition of FERDINAND the fecond and the third. The thirty years war that devasted Germany did not begin till the eighteenth year of the seventeenth century, but the feeds of it were fowing fome time before, and even at the end of the fixteenth. DINAND the first and MAXIMILIAN had fhewn much lenity and moderation in the disputes and troubles that arose on account of religion. Under RODOLPHUS and MAT-THIAS, as the fuccession of their cousin FER-DINAND approached, the fires that were covered began to smoke and to sparkle: and if the war did not begin with this century. the preparation for it, and the expectation of it did.

THE fecond period ends in one thousand fix hundred and fixty, the year of the restoration of Charles the second to the throne of England; when our civil wars, and all the disorders which Cromwell's usurpation had produced, were over; and therefore a remarkable point of time, with respect to our country. It is no less remarkable with respect to Germany, Spain, and France.

As to Germany; the ambitious projects of the German branch of Austria had been entirely defeated, the peace of the empire had been restored, and almost a new constitution formed, or an old one revived, by the treaties of Westphalia; nay the imperial eagle was not only fallen, but her wings were clipped.

As to Spain; the Spanish branch was fallen as low twelve years afterwards, that is, in the year one thousand fix hundred and fixty. Philip the second left his successors a ruined monarchy. He left them fomething worse; he left them his example and his principles of government, founded in ambition, in pride, in ignorance, in bigotry, and all the pedantry of state. I have red somewhere or other, that the war of the Low Countries alone cost him, by his own confession, five hundred and fixtyfour millions, a prodigious fum in what species soever he reckoned. Philip the third and PHILIP the fourth followed his example and his principles of government, at home and abroad. At home, there was much form, but no good order, no œconomy, nor wisdom of policy in the state. The church

Of the Study of History. 193 church continued to devour the state, and that monfter the inquisition to dispeople the country, even more than perpetual war, and all the numerous colonies that Spain had tent to the West-Indies: for your lordship will find that PHILIP the third drove more than nine hundred thousand Moriscoes out of his dominions by one edict, with fuch circumstances of inhumanity in the execution of it, as Spaniards alone could exercise, and that tribunal who had provoked this unhappy race to revolt, could alone approve. Abroad, the conduct of these princes was directed by the same wild fpirit of ambition: rash in undertaking tho flow to execute, and obstinate in pursuing tho unable to fucceed, they opened a new fluice to let out the little life and vigor that remained in their monarchy. PHILIP the fecond is faid to have been piqued against his uncle FERDINAND, for refusing to yield the empire to him on the abdication of CHARLES the fifth. Certain it is, that as much as he loved to diffurb the peace of mankind, and to meddle in every quarrel that had the appearance of supporting the Roman and oppressing every other church, he meddled little in the affairs of Germany. But, FERDINAND and MAXI-MILIAN

MILIAN dead, and the off-spring of MAXI-MILIAN extinct, the kings of Spain espoused the interests of the other branch of their family, entertained remote views of ambition in favor of their own branch, even on that fide, and made all the enterprises of Ferdinand of Gratz, both before and after his elevation to the empire, the common cause of the house of Austria. What compleated their ruin was this: they knew not how to lofe, nor when to yield. They acknowledged the independency of the Dutch commonwealth, and became the allies of their antient subjects at the treaty of Munster: but they would not forego their usurped claim on Portugal, and they persisted to carry on fingly the war against France. Thus they were reduced to such a lowness of power as can hardly be paralleled in any other case: and Philip the fourth was obliged at last to conclude a peace, on terms repugnant to his inclination, to that of his people, to the interest of Spain, and to that of all Europe, in the Pyrenean treaty.

As to France; this aera of the entire fall of the Spanish power is likewise that from which we may reckon that France grew as formidable, as we have seen her, to her

Of the Study of History. 195 her neighbours, in power and pretenfions. HENRY the fourth meditated great defigns, and prepared to act a great part in Europe in the very beginning of this period, when RAVAILLAC stabbed him. His designs died with him, and are rather gueffed at than known; for furely those which his historian PEREFIXE and the compilers of Sully's memorials ascribe to him, of a christian commonwealth, divided into fifteen states, and of a fenate to decide all differences, and to maintain this new constitution of Europe, are too chimerical to have been really his: but his general defign of abasing the house of Austria, and establishing the fuperior power in that of Bourbon, was taken up, about twenty years after his death, by Richlieu, and was purfued by him and by MAZARIN with fo much ability and fuccess, that it was effected entirely by the treaties of Westphalia and by the Pyrenean treaty: that is, at the end of the fecond of those periods I have prefumed to propose to your lordship.

When the third, in which we now are, will end, and what circumstances will mark the end of it, I know not: but this I know, that the great events and revolutions, which N 2 have

have happened in the course of it, interest us still more nearly than those of the two precedent periods. I intended to have drawn up an elenchus or summary of the three, but I doubted, on further reslection, whether my memory would enable me to do it with exactness enough: and I saw that, if I was able to do it, the deduction would be immeasurably long. Something of this kind however it may be reasonable to attempt, in speaking of the last period: which may hereafter occasion a surther trouble to your lordship.

But to give you some breathing-time, I will postpone it at present, and am in the mean while,

My Lord,

Your, &c.

A sketch of the state and history of Europe from the Pyrenean treaty in one thousand six hundred and sifty nine, to the year one thousand six hundred and eighty eight.

THE first observation I shall make on this third period of modern history is, that as the ambition of Charles the fifth, who united the whole formidable power of Austria in himself, and the restless temper, the cruelty, and bigotry of Philip the second, were principally objects of the attention and solicitude of the councils of Europe, in the first of these periods; and as the ambition of Ferdinand the second, and the third, who aimed at nothing less N 3

198 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7. than extirpating the protestant interest, and under that pretence fubduing the liberties of Germany, were objects of the fame kind in the fecond: fo an opposition to the growing power of France, or to fpeak more properly, to the exorbitant ambition of the house of Bourbon, has been the principal affair of Europe, during the greatest part of the present period. The defign of aspiring to universal monarchy was imputed to Charles the fifth, as foon as he began to give proofs of his ambition and capacity. The fame defign was imputed to Lewis the fourteenth, as foon. as he began to feel his own strength, and the weakness of his neighbours. Neither of these princes was induced, I believe, by the flattery of his courtiers, or the apprehensions of his adversaries, to entertain fo chimerical a defign as this would have been, even in that false sense wherein the word universal is so often understood: and I mistake very much if either of them was of a character, or in circumstances, to undertake it. Both of them had ftrong defires to raise their families higher, and to extend their dominions farther; but neither of them had that bold and adventurous ambition which makes a conqueror and

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. and an hero. These apprehensions however were given wifely, and taken usefully. They cannot be given nor taken too foon when fuch powers as these arise; because when fuch powers as these are besieged as it were early, by the common policy and watchfulness of their neighbours, each of them may in his turn of strength fally forth, and gain a little ground; but none of them will be able to push their conquests far, and much less to consummate the entire projects of their ambition. fides the occasional opposition that was given to CHARLES the fifth by our HENRY the eighth, according to the different moods of humor he was in; by the popes, according to the feveral turns of their private interest; and by the princes of Germany according to the occasions or pretences that religion or civil liberty furnished, he had from his first setting out a rival and an enemy in FRANCIS the first, who did not maintain his cause " in "forma pauperis," if I may use such an expression: as we have seen the house of Austria sue, in our days, for dominion at the gate of every palace in Europe. FRANCIS the first was the principal in his own quarrels, paid his own armies, fought N4

### 200 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let.

his own battles; and tho his valour alone did not hinder CHARLES the fifth from fubduing all Europe, as BAYLE, a better philologer than politician, fomewhere afferts, but a multitude of other circumstances easily to be traced in history; yet he contributed by his victories, and even by his defeats, to waste the strength and check the course of that growing power. Lewis the fourteenth had no rival of this kind in the house of Austria, nor indeed any enemy of this importance to combat, till the prince of Orange became king of Great Britain: and he had great advantages in many other respects, which it is necessary to consider in order to make a true judgment on the affairs of Europe from the year one thousand six hundred and fixty. You will discover the first of these advantages, and such as were productive of all the rest, in the conduct of RICHELIEU and of MAZARIN. RICHE-LIEU formed the great design, and laid the foundations: MAZARIN purfued the design, and raised the superstructure. If I do not deceive myself extremely, there are few passages in history that deserve your lordship's attention more than the conduct that the first and greatest of these ministers

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. 201 ministers held, in laying the foundations I speak of. You will observe how he helped to embroil affairs on every fide. and to keep the house of Austria at bay as it were; how he entered into the quarrels of Italy against Spain, into that concerning the Valteline, and that concerning the fuccession of Mantua; without engaging fo deep as to divert him from another great object of his policy, fubduing Rochelle and difarming the Huguenots. You will observe how he turned himself, after this was done, to stop the progress of Ferdi-NAND in Germany. Whilst Spain fomented discontents at the court and disorders in the kingdom of France, by all possible means, even by taking engagements with the duke of ROHAN, and for supporting the protestants; RICHELIEU abetted the same interest in Germany against FERDINAND: and in the Low Countries against Spain. The emperor was become almost the master in Germany. CHRISTIAN the fourth, king of Denmark, had been at the head of a league, wherein the United Provinces, Sweden, and Lower Saxony entered, to oppose his progress: but CHRISTIAN had been defeated by TILLY and VAL-STEIN, and obliged to conclude a treaty

at

202 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7. at Lubec, where FERDINAND gave him the law. It was then that Gustavus ADOLPHUS, with whom RICHELIEU made an alliance, entered into this war, and foon turned the fortune of it. French minister had not yet engaged his mafter openly in the war; but when the Dutch grew impatient, and threatned to renew their truce with Spain, unless France declared; when the king of SwE-DEN was killed, and the battle of Nordlingen loft; when Saxony had turned again to the fide of the emperor, and Brandenburg and fo many others had followed this example, that Hesse almost alone perfifted in the Swedish alliance: then RICHELIEU engaged his master. and profited of every circumstance which the conjuncture afforded, to engage him with advantage. For, first, he had a double advantage by engaging fo late: that of coming fresh into the quarrel against a wearied and almost exhausted enemy; and that of yielding to the impatience of his friends, who, preffed by their necessities and by the want they had of France, gave this minister an opportunity of laying those claims and establishing those pretensions, in all his treaties with

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. 203 Holland, Sweden, and the princes and states of the empire, on which he had projected the future aggrandifement of France. The manner in which he engaged, and the air that he gave to his engagement, were advantages of the fecond fort, advantages of reputation and credit; yet were these of no small moment in the course of the war, and operated strongly in favor of France as he defigned they should, even after his death, and at and after the treaties of He varnished ambition Westphalia. with the most plausible and popular pretences. The elector of TREVES had put himself under the protection of France: and, if I remember right, he made this step when the emperor could not protect him against the Swedes, whom he had reason to apprehend. No matter, the governor of Luxemburg was ordered to furprise Treves and to seize the elector. He executed his orders with fuccess, and carried this prince prisoner into Brabant. RICHELIEU seized the lucky circumstance; he reclaimed the elector: and on the refusal of the cardinal infant, the war was declared. France, you fee, appeared the common friend of liberty, the

204 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7 the defender of it in the Low Countries against the king of Spain, and in Germany against the emperor, as well as the protector of the princes of the empire, many of whose estates had been illegally invaded, and whose persons were no longer safe from violence even in their own All these appearances were kept up in the negociations at Munster, where MAZARIN reaped what RICHE-LIEU had fowed. The demands that France made for herself were very great; but the conjuncture was favorable, and she improved it to the utmost. figure could be more flattering than her's, at the head of these negociations; nor more mortifying than the emperor's through the whole course of the treaty. The princes and states of the empire had been treated as vaffals by the emperor: France determined them to treat with him on this occasion as sovereigns, and supported them in this determination. Whilft Sweden feemed concerned for the protestant interest alone, and shewed no other regard, as she had no other alliance; France affected to be impartial alike to the protestant and to the papist, and to have no interest at heart but the common inter-

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. interest of the Germanic body. Her demands were excessive, but they were to be fatisfied principally out of the emperor's patrimonial dominions. It had been the art of her ministers to establish this general maxim on many particular experiences, that the grandeur of France was a real, and would be a conflant fecurity to the rights and liberties of the empire against the emperor: and it is no wonder therefore, this maxim prevailing, injuries, refentments, and jealousies being fresh on one side, and services, obligations, and confidence on the other, that the Germans were not unwilling France should extend her empire on this side of the Rhine, whilst Sweden did the same on this fide of the Baltic. These treaties, and the immense credit and influence that France had acquired by them in the empire, put it out of the power of one branch of the house of Austria to return the obligations of affiftance to the other, in the war that continued between France and Spain, till the Pyrenean treaty. By this treaty the superiority of the house of Bourbon over the house of Austria was not only completed and confirmed, but the great delign of uniting

206 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7 uniting the Spanish and the French monarchies under the former was laid.

THE third period therefore begins by a great change of the balance of power in Europe, and by the prospect of one much greater and more fatal. Before I descend into the particulars I intend to mention, of the course of affairs, and of the political conduct of the great powers of Europe in this third period; give me leave to cast my eyes once more back on the second. The resection I am going to make seems to me important, and leads to all that is to follow.

THE Dutch made their peace separately at Munster with Spain, who acknowledged then the sovereignty and independency of their commonwealth. The French, who had been, after our Elizabeth, their principal support, reproached them severely for this breach of faith. They excused themselves in the best manner, and by the best reasons, they could. All this your lordship will find in the monuments of that time. But I think it not improbable that they had a motive you will not find there,

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. 207 and which it was not proper to give as a reason or excuse to the French. Might not the wife men amongst them consider even then, besides the immediate advantages that accrued by this treaty to their commonwealth, that the imperial power was fallen; that the power of Spain was vaftly reduced; that the house of Austria was nothing more than the shadow of a great name, and that the house of Bourbon was advancing, by large strides, to a degree of power as exorbitant, and as formidable as that of the other family had been in the hands of CHARLES the fifth. of PHILIP the second, and lately of the two FERDINANDS? Might they not forefee, even then, what happened in the course of very few years, when they were obliged, for their own fecurity, to affift their old enemies the Spaniards against their old friends the French? I think they might. Our CHARLES the first was no great politician, and yet he seemed to discern that the balance of power was turning in favor of France, some years before the treaties of Westphalia. He refused to be neuter, and threatned to take part with Spain, if the French pursued the defign of belieging Dunkirk and Grave-

208 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7. Graveline, according to a concert taken between them and the Dutch, and in pursuance of a treaty for dividing the Spanish Low Countries, which RICHE-LIEU had negotiated. CROMWELL either did not discern this turn of the balance of power, long afterwards when it was much more visible; or, discerning it, he was induced by reasons of private interest to act against the general interest of Europe. CROMWELL joined with France against Spain, and tho he got Jamaica and Dunkirk, he drove the Spaniards into a necessity of making a peace with France, that has disturbed the peace of the world almost fourfcore years, and the confequences of which have well-nigh beggared in our times the nation he enflaved in his. There is a tradition, I have heard it from persons who lived in those days, and I believe it came from THURLOE, that CROMWELL was in treaty with Spain, and ready to turn his arms against France when he died. If this fact was certain, as little as I honor his memory, I should have some regret that he died fo foon. But whatever his intentions were, we must charge the Pyrenean treaLet.7. and State of EUROPE. 209
ty, and the fatal consequences of it,
in great measure to his account. The
Spaniards abhorred the thought of
marrying their Infanta to Lewis the
fourteenth. It was on this point that
they broke the negociation Lionne
had begun: and your lordship will
perceive, that if they resumed it afterwards, and offered the marriage they
had before rejected, Cromwell's
league with France was a principal inducement to this alteration of their refolutions.

THE precise point at which the scales of power turn like that of the folftice in either tropic, is imperceptible to common observation: and, in one case as in the other, some progress must be made in the new direction, before the change is perceived. They who are in the finking scale, for in the political balance of power, unlike to all others, the scale that is empty finks, and that which is full rises; they who are in the finking scale do not easily come off from the habitual prejudices of superior wealth, or power, or skill, or courage, nor from the

210 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7 the confidence that these prejudices in-They who are in the rifing pire. scale do not immediately feel their strength, nor assume that confidence in fuccessful experience gives it which them afterwards. They who are the most concerned to watch the variations of this balance, mif-judge often in the fame manner, and from the fame pre-They continue to dread a judices. power no longer able to hurt them, or they continue to have no apprehenfions of a power that grows daily more Spain verified the first formidable. at the end of the fecond observation period, when, proud and poor, and enterprising and feeble, she still thought herself a match for France. France verified the fecond observation at the beginning of the third period, when the triple alliance stopped the progress of her arms, which alliances much more considerable were not able to effect afterwards. The other principal powers of Europe, in their turns, have verified the third observation in both it's parts, through the whole course of this period.

WHEN

WHEN LEWIS the fourteenth took the administration of affairs into his own hands, about the year one thoufand fix hundred and fixty, he was in the prime of his age, and had, what princes feldom have, the advantages of youth and those of experience together. Their education is generally bad; for which reason royal birth, that gives a right to the throne among other people, gave an absolute exclusion from it among the Mamalukes. His was, in all respects, except one, as bad as that of other princes. He jested sometimes on his own ignorance; and there were other defects in his character, owing to his education, which he did not see. But MAZARIN had initiated him betimes into the mysteries of his policy. He had feen a great part of those foundations laid, on which he was to raise the fabric of his future grandeur: and as MAZARIN finished the work that RICHELIEU began, he had the lessons of one, and the examples of both, to instruct him. He had acquired habits of fecrecy and method, in business; of reserve, discretion, decency, and dignity, in behaviour. If he was not the greatest king, he was

02

the

212 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7 the best actor of majesty at least, that ever filled a throne. He by no means wanted that courage which is commonly called bravery, tho the want of it was imputed to him in the midft of his greatest triumphs: nor that other courage, less oftentations and more rarely found, calm, fleady, persevering refolution; which feems to arife less from the temper of the body, and is therefore called courage of the mind. had them both most certainly, and I could produce unquestionable anecdotes in proof. He was, in one word, much fuperior to any prince with whom he had to do, when he began to govern. He was furrounded with great captains bred in former wars, and with great ministers bred in the same school as himself. They who had worked under MAZARIN, worked on the same plan under him; and as they had the advantage of genius, and experience over most of the ministers of other countries, so they had another advantage over those who were equal or superior to them: the advantage of ferving a master whose absolute power was established; and the advantage of a situation wherein they might exert their

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. 212 whole capacity without contradiction; over that, for instance, wherein your lordship's great grand-father was placed, at the same time, in England, and JOHN DE WIT in Holland. Among thefe ministers, COLBERT must be mentioned particularly upon this occasion; because it was he who improved the wealth, and confequently the power of France extremely, by the order he put into the finances, and by the encouragement he gave to trade and manu-The foil, the climate, the factures. fituation of France, the ingenuity, the industry, the vivacity of her inhabitants are fuch; she has so little want of the product of other countries, and other countries have fo many real or imaginary wants to be supplied by her; that when she is not at war with all her neighbours, when her domestic quiet is preferved and any tolerable administration of government prevails, she must grow rich at the expence of those who trade, and even of those who do not open a trade, with her. Her bawbles, her modes, the follies and extravagancies of her luxury, cost England, about the time we are speaking of, 03

214 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7. little less than eight hundred thousand pounds sterling a year, and other nations in their proportions. Colbert made the most of all these advantageous circumstances, and whilst he filled the national spunge, he taught his successors how to squeeze it; a secret that he repented having discovered, they say, when he saw the immense sums that were necessary to supply the growing magnificence of his master.

This was the character of Lewis the fourteenth, and this was the state of his kingdom at the beginning of the present period. If his power was great, his pretenfions were still greater. He had renounced, and the Infanta with his confent had renounced, all right to the fuccession of Spain, in the strongest terms that the precaution of the councils of Madrid could con-No matter; he consented to these renunciations, but your lordship will find by the letters of MAZARIN, and by other memorials, that he acted on the contrary principle, from the first, which he avowed soon afterwards. Such a power, and fuch pretenfions

Let.7. and State of EUROPE. 215 tensions, should have given, one would think, an immediate alarm to the rest of Europe. PHILIP the fourth was broken and decayed, like the monarchy he governed. One of his fons died. as I remember, during the negociations that preceded the year one thoufand fix hundred and fixty: and the furvivor, who was CHARLES the fecond. rather languished, than lived, from the cradle to the grave. So dangerous a contingency, therefore, as the union of the two monarchies of France and Spain, being in view forty years together; one would imagine that the principal powers of Europe had the means of preventing it constantly in view during the same time. But it was otherwife. France acted very fystematically from the year one thousand six hundred and fixty, to the death of king CHARLES the fecond of Spain. She never loft fight of her great object, the fuccession to the whole Spanish monarchy; and she accepted the will of the king of SPAIN in favor of the duke of Anjou. As she never lost fight of her great object during this time, so she lost no opportunity of increafing

216 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7. creafing her power, while she waited for that of succeeding in her pretensi-The two branches of Austria were in no condition of making a confiderable opposition to her designs and attempts. Holland, who of all other powers was the most concerned to oppose them, was at that time under two influences that hindered her from pursuing her true interest. Her true interest was to have used her utmost endeavours to unite closely and intimately with England on the restoration of king CHARLES. She did the very contrary. JOHN DE WIT, at the head of the Louvestein faction, governed. The interest of his party was to keep the house of Orange down; he courted therefore the friendship of France, and neglected that of England. The alliance between our nation and the Dutch was renewed, I think, in one thousand fix hundred and fixty two: but the latter had made a defensive league with France a little before, on the fupposition principally of a war with England. The war became inevitable very foon. CROMWELL had chaftifed them for their usurpations in trade, and

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. 217 and the outrages and cruelties they had committed; but he had not cured them. The fame spirit continued in the Dutch, the same resentments in the English: and the pique of merchants became the pique of nations. France entered into the war on the fide of Holland; but the little affiftance she gave the Dutch shewed plainly enough that her intention was to make these two powers waste their strength against one another, whilft she extended her conquests in the Spanish I.ow Countries. Her invasion of these provinces obliged DE WIT to change his conduct. Hitherto he had been attached to France in the closest manner, had led his republic to ferve all the purposes of France, and had renewed with the marshal D'ESTRADES a project of dividing the Spanish Netherlands between France and Holland. that had been taken up formerly, when Richelieu made use of it to flatter their ambition, and to engage them to prolong the war against Spain. A project not unlike to that which was held out to them by the famous preliminaries, and the extravagant barrier218 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7. rier-treaty, in one thousand seven hundred and nine; and which engaged them to continue a war on the principle of ambition, into which they had entered with more reasonable and more moderate views.

As the private interests of the two DE WITS kindered that common-wealth from being on her guard, as early as fhe ought to have been, against France; fo the mistaken policy of the court of England, and the short views, and the profuse temper of the prince who governed, gave great advantages to Lewis the fourteenth in the pursuit of his defigns. He bought Dunkirk: and your lordship knows how great a clamor was raifed on that occasion against your noble ancestor; as if he alone had been answerable for the meafure, and his interest had been concerned in it. I have heard our late friend Mr. George Clark quote a witness, who was quite unexceptionable, but I cannot recal his name at prefent, who, many years after all these transactions, and the death of my lord CLAREN-DON, affirmed, that the earl of SAND-

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. 219 wich had owned to him, that he himfelf gave his opinion, among many others, officers, and ministers, for selling Dunkirk. Their reasons could not be good, I prefume to fay; but feveral, that might be plaufible at that time. are eafily gueffed. A prince like king CHARLES, who would have made as many bad bargains as any young fpendthrift, for money, finding himself thus backed, we may affure ourselves, was peremptorily determined to fell: and whatever your great grand-father's opinion was, this I am able to pronounce upon my own experience, that his treaty for the fale is no proof he was of opinion to fell. When the refolution of felling was once taken, to whom could the fale be made? To the Dutch? No. This measure would have been at least as impolitic, and, in that moment, perhaps more odious than the other. To the Spaniards? They were unable to buy: and, as low as their power was funk, the principle of opposing it still prevailed. I have fometimes thought that the Spaniards, who were forced to make peace with Portugal, and to renounce all claim

220 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7. claim to that crown, four or five years afterwards, might have been induced to take this resolution then, if the regaining Dunkirk without any expence had been a condition proposed to them; and that the Portuguese, who, notwithstanding their alliance with England and the indirect fuccours that France afforded them, were little able, after the treaty especially, to support a war against Spain, might have been induced to pay the price of Dunkirk, for fo great an advantage as immediate peace with Spain, and the extinction of all foreign pretences on their crown. But this speculation concerning events fo long ago paffed is not much to the purpose here. I proceed therefore to observe, that notwithstanding the sale of Dunkirk, and the fecret leanings of our court to that of France, yet England was first to take the alarm, when Lewis the fourteenth invaded the Spanish Netherlands in one thousand fix hundred and fixty seven: and the triple alliance was the work of an English minister. It was time to take this alarm; for from the moment that the king of FRANCE claimed a right to the county of Burgundy, the dutchy

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. 221 of Brabant, and other portions of the Low Countries as devolved on his queen by the death of her father PHILIP the fourth, he pulled off the mask entirely. Volumes were written to establish, and to refute this supposed right. Your lordship no doubt will look into a controverfy that has employed fo many pens and fo many fwords; and I believe you will think it was fufficiently bold in the French, to argue from customs, that regulated the course of private successions in certain provinces, to a right of fucceeding to the fovereignty of those provinces; and to affert the divisibility of the Spanish monarchy, with the fame breath with which they afferted the indivisibility of their own; altho the proofs in one case were just as good as the proofs in the other, and the fundamental law of indivisibility was at least as good a law in Spain, as either this or the Salique law was in France. But however proper it might be for the French and Austrian pens to enter into long discussions, and to appeal, on this great occasion, to the rest of Europe; the rest of Europe had a short objection to make to the plea of France, which

222 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7. which no fophisms, no quirks of law. could evade. Spain accepted the renunciations as a real fecurity: France gave them as such to Spain, and in effect to the rest of Europe. If they had not been thus given, and thus taken, the Spaniards would not have married their Infanta to the king of FRANCE, whatever diffress they might have endured by the prolongation of the war. These renunciations were renunciations of all rights whatfoever to the whole Spanish monarchy, and to every part of The provinces claimed by France at this time were parts of it. To claim them, was therefore to claim the whole; for if the renunciations were no bar to the rights accruing to MARY THERESA on the death of her father Philip the fourth, neither could they be any to the rights that would accrue to her and her children, on the death of her brother CHARLES the second: an unhealthful youth, and who at this instant was in immediate danger of dying; for to all the complicated diffempers he brought into the world with him, the small-pox was added. Your lordship sees how the fatal contingency of uniting the two

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. 223 monarchies of France and Spain stared mankind in the face; and yet nothing, that I can remember, was done to prevent it: not fo much as a guaranty given, or a declaration made to affert the validity of these renunciations, and for fecuring the effect of them. The triple alliance indeed stopped the progress of the French arms, and produced the treaty of Aix la Chapelle. But England, Sweden, and Holland, the contracting powers in this alliance, seemed to look, and probably did look, no farther. France kept a great and important part of what she had surprized or ravished, or purchased; for we cannot say with any propriety that she conquered: and the Spaniards were obliged to fet all they faved to the account of gain. The German branch of Austria had been reduced very low in power and in credit under FER-DINAND the third, by the treaties of Westphalia, as I have said already. Lewis the fourteenth maintained, during many years, the influence these treaties had given him among the princes and states of the empire. The famous capitulation made at Frankfort on the election of LEOPOLD, who fucceeded FERDINAND 2bout the year one thousand six hundred and fifty

224 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7. fifty feven, was encouraged by the intrigues of France: and the power of France was looked upon as the fole power that could ratify and fecure effectually the observation of the conditions then made. league of the Rhine was not renewed I believe after the year one thousand fix hundred and fixty fix; but the this league was not renewed, yet some of these princes and states continued in their old engagement with France: whilft others took new engagements on particular occasions, according as private and sometimes very paultry interests, and the emisfaries of France in all their little courts. disposed them. In short the princes of Germany shewed no alarm at the growing ambition and power of Lewis the fourteenth, but contributed to encourage one, and to confirm the other. In such a state of things the German branch was little able to affift the Spanish branch against France, either in the war that ended by the Pyrenean treaty, or in that we are speaking of here, the short war that began in one thousand fix hundred and fixty seven, and was ended by the treaty of Aix la Chapelle, in one thousand fix hundred and fixty eight. But it was not this alone that disabled the emperor from acting

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. with vigor in the cause of his family then. nor that has rendered the house of Austria a dead weight upon all her allies ever fince. Bigotry, and its inseparable companion, cruelty, as well as the tyranny and avarice of the court of Vienna, created in those days, and has maintained in ours, almost a perpetual diversion of the imperial arms from all effectual opposition to France. I mean to fpeak of the troubles in Hungary. Whatever they became in their progress, they were caused originally by the usurpations and perfecutions of the emperor: and when the Hungarians were called rebels first, they were called so for no other reason than this, that they would not be flaves. The dominion of the emperor being less supportable than that of the Turks, this unhappy people opened a door to the latter to infest the empire, instead of making their country what it had been before, a barrier against the Ottoman power. France became a fure, tho fecret ally of the Turks, as well as the Hungarians, and has found her account in it, by keeping the emperor in perpetual alarms on that fide, while she has ravaged the empire and the Low Countries on the other. Thus we faw, thirty two years ago, the arms of France and Bavaria in possession of Passau, and the malcontents

226 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7 contents of Hungary in the fuburbs of Vienna. In a word, when Lewis the fourteenth made the first essay of his power, by the war of one thousand fix hundred and fixty feven, and founded, as it were, the councils of Europe concerning his pretenfions on the Spanish succession, he found his power to be great beyond what his neighbours or even he perhaps thought it: great by the wealth, and greater by the united spirit of his people; greater still by the ill policy, and divided interests that governed those who had a superior common interest to oppose him. He found that the members of the triple alliance did not fee, or feeing did not think proper to own that they faw, the injustice, and the consequence of his pretensions. They contented themselves to give to Spain an act of guaranty for fecuring the execution of the treaty of Aix la Chapelle. He knew even then how ill the guaranty would be observed by two of them at least, by England and by Sweden. The treaty itself was nothing more than a composition between the bully and the bullied. Tournay, and Lise, and Doway, and other places that I have forgot, were yielded to him: and he restored the county of Burgundy, according to the option that Spain made, against

Let.7. and State of EUROPE. against the interest and expectation too of the Dutch, when an option was forced tipon her. The king of Spain compounded for his possession: but the emperor compounded at the same time for his succession, by a private eventual treaty of partition, which the commander of GRE-MONVILLE and the count of Aversberg figned at Vienna. The fame LEOPOLD. who exclaimed fo loudly, in one thoufand fix hundred and ninety eight, against any partition of the Spanish monarchy, and refused to submit to that which England and Holland had then made, made one himself in one thousand six hundred and fixty eight, with fo little regard to these two powers, that the whole ten provinces were thrown into the lot of France.

THERE is no room to wonder if such experience as Lew 1s the fourteenth had upon this occasion, and such a face of affairs in Europe, raising his hopes, raised his ambition: and if, in making peace at Aix la Chapelle, he meditated a new war, the war of one thousand six hundred and seventy two; the preparations he made for it, by negotiations in all parts, by alliances whereever he found ingression, and by the in-

228 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7. crease of his forces, were equally proofs of ability, industry, and power. I shall not descend into these particulars: your lordship will find them pretty well detailed in the memorials of that time. But one of the alliances he made I must mention, tho I mention it with the utmost regret and indignation. England was fatally engaged to act a part in this conspiracy against the peace and the liberty of Europe, nay, against her own peace and her own liberty; for a bubble's part it was, equally wicked and impolitic. Forgive the terms I use, my lord: none can be too ftrong. principles of the triple alliance, just and wife, and worthy of a king of England, were laid aside. Then, the progress of the French arms was to be checked, the ten provinces were to be faved, and by faving them the barrier of Holland was to be pre-Now, we joined our counsels and our arms to those of France, in a project that could not be carried on at all, as it was casy to foresee, and as the event shewed, unless it was carried on against Spain, the emperor, and most of the princes of Germany, as well as the Dutch; and which could not be carried on fuccessfully, without leaving the ten provinces entirely at the mercy of France and giving her pretence and

Let.7. and State of EUROPE. 220 and opportunity of ravaging the empire, and extending her conquests on the Rhine. The medal of VAN BEUNINGHEN, other pretences that France took for attacking the states of the Low Countries, were ridiculous. They imposed on no one: and the true object of Lewis the fourteenth was manifest to all. But what could a king of England mean? CHARLES the second had reasons of resentment against the Dutch, and just ones too no doubt. Among the rest, it was not easy for him to forget the affront he had fuffered, and the loss he had fustained, when, depending on the peace that was ready to be figned, and that was figned at Breda in July, he neglected to fit out his fleet; and when that of Holland, commanded by RUYTER, with CORNELIUS DE WIT on board as deputy or commitfioner of the states, burnt his Ships at Chatham in June. The famous perpetual edict, as it was called but did not prove in the event, against the election of a state-holder. which JOHN DE WIT promoted, carried, and obliged the prince of ORANGE to swear to maintain a very few days after the conclusion of the peace at Breda, might be another motive in the breast of king CHARLES the second: as it was certainly a pretence of revenge on the Dutch, or at least

230 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7. on the DE WITS and the Louvestein faction. that ruled almost despotically in that commonwealth. But it is plain that neither these reasons, nor others of a more ancient date, determined him to this alliance with France; fince he contracted the triple alliance within four or five months after the two events, I have mentioned, happened. What then did he mean? Did he mean to acquire one of the feven provinces, and divide them, as the Dutch had twice treated for the division of the ten, with France? I believe not; but this I believe, that his inclinations were favorable to the popish interest in general, and that he meant to make himself more absolute at home; that he thought it necessary to this end to humble the Dutch, to reduce their power, and perhaps to change the form of their government; to deprive his subjects of the correspondence with a neighbouring protestant and free state, and of all hope of succour and support from thence in their opposition to him; in a word to abet the defigns of France on the continent, that France might abet his defigns on his own kingdom. This, I fay, I believe; and this I should venture to affirm, if I had in my hands to produce, and was at liberty to quote, the private relations I have red formerly, drawn

Let.7. and State of EUROPE. 231 up by those who were no enemies to such designs, and on the authority of those who were parties to them. But whatever king CHARLES the second meant, certain it is that his conduct established the superiority of France in Europe.

But this charge, however, must not be confined to him alone. Those who were nearer the danger, those who were exposed to the immediate attacks of France, and even those who were her rivals for the same fuccession, having either assisted her, or engaged to remain neuters, a strange fatality prevailed, and produced fuch a conjuncture as can hardly be paralleled in history. Your lordship will observe with astonishment, even in the beginning of the year one thousand fix hundred and seventy two, all the neighbours of France acting as if they had nothing to fear from her, and fome as if they had much to hope, by helping her to oppress the Dutch and sharing with her the spoils of that common-"Delenda est Carthago," was the cry in England, and feemed too a maxim on the continent.

In the course of the same year, you will observe that all these powers took the alarm,
P 4 and

232 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7 and began to unite in opposition to France. Even England thought it time to interpose in favor of the Dutch. The consequences of this alarm, of this fudden turn in the policy of Europe, and of that which happened by the massacre of the DE Wirs, and the elevation of the prince of ORANGE, in the government of the feven provinces, faved these provinces, and stopped the rapid progress of the arms of France. Lewis the fourteenth indeed furprifed the feven provinces in this war, as he had furprifed the ten in that of one thousand fix hundred and fixty feven, and ravaged defenceless countries with armies sufficient to conquer them, if they had been prepared to refift. In the war of one thousand six hundred and feventy two, he had little less than one hundred and fifty thousand men on foot, besides the bodies of English, Swiss, Italians, and Swedes, that amounted to thirty or forty thousand more. With this mighty force he took forty places in forty days, imposed extravagant conditions of peace, played the monarch a little while at Utrecht; and as foon as the Dutch recovered from their consternation, and, animated by the example of the prince of Orange and the hopes of fuccour, refused these conditions, he went back to Versailles,

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. and left his generals to carry on his enterprize: which they did with fo little fuccess, that Grave and Maestricht alone remained to him of all the boafted conquests he had made; and even these he offered two years afterwards to restore, if by that concession he could have prevailed on the Dutch at that time to make peace with him. But they were not yet disposed to abandon their allies; for allies now they had. The emperor and the king of Spain had engaged in the quarrel against France, and many of the princes of the empire had done the fame. Not all. The Bavarian continued obstinate in his neutrality, and, to mention no more, the Swedes made a great diversion. in favour of France in the empire; where the duke of Hanover abetted their designs as much as he could, for he was a zealous partifan of France, tho the other princes of his house acted for the common cause. I descend into no more particulars. war that Lewis the fourteenth kindled by attacking in fo violent a manner the Dutch commonwealth, and by making fo arbitrary an use of his first success, became general, in the Low Countries, in Spain, in Sicily, on the upper and lower Rhine, in Denmark, in Sweden, and in the provinces of Germany belonging to these two crowns;

234 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7. on the Mediterranean, the Ocean, and the Baltic. France supported this war with advantage on every fide: and when your lordship considers in what manner it was carried on against her, you will not be furprifed that she did so. Spain had spirit, but too little strength to maintain her power in Sicily, where Messina had revolted; to defend her frontier on that fide of the Pyrenees; and to relift the great efforts of the French in the Low Countries. The empire was divided; and, even among the princes who acted against France, there was neither union in their councils, nor concert in their projects, nor order in preparations, nor vigor in execution: and, to fay the truth, there was not, in the whole confederacy, a man whose abilities could make him a match for the prince of CONDE or the marshal of Turenne; nor many who were in any degree equal to LUXEMBURG, CREQUI, SCHOMBERG, and other generals of inferior note, who commanded the armies of France. The emperor took this very time to make new invasions on the liberties of Hungary, and to oppress his protestant subjects. The prince of ORANGE alone acted with invincible firmness, like a patriot, and a hero. Neither the feductions of France nor those of England, neither

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. neither the temptations of ambition nor those of private interest could make him fwerve from the true interest of his country, nor from the common interest of Europe. He had raised more sieges, and lost more battles, it was faid, than any general of his age had done. Be it so. But his defeats were manifestly due in great measure to circumstances independent on him: and that spirit, which even these defeats could not depress. was all his own. He had difficulties in his own commonwealth; the governors of the Spanish Low Countries crossed his meafures fometimes: the German allies difappointed and broke them often: and it is not improbable that he was frequently betrayed. He was fo perhaps even by Souches, the imperial general: a Frenchman according to BAYLE, and a pensioner of Louvois according to common report, and very strong appearances. He had not yet credit and authority sufficient to make him a centre of union to a whole confederacy, the foul that animated and directed fo great a body. He came to be fuch afterwards; but at the time spoken of he could not take fo great a part upon him. No other prince or general was equal to it: and the confequences of this defect appeared almost in every operation. France was furrounded

236 A Sketch of the History Let. 7. rounded by a multitude of enemies, all intent to demolish her power. But, like the builders of Babel, they spoke different languages; and as those could not build, these could not demolish, for want of understanding one another. France improved this advantage by her arms, and more by her negotiations. Nimeghen was, after Cologn, the scene of these. England was the mediating power, and I know not whether our CHARLES the fecond did not ferve her purposes more usefully in the latter, and under the character of mediator, than he did or could have done by joining his arms to her's, and acting as her ally. The Dutch were induced to fign a treaty with him, that broke the confederacy, and gave great advantage to France: for the purport of it was to oblige France and Spain to make peace on a plan to be proposed to them, and no mention was made in it of the other allies that I remember. The Dutch were glad to get out of an expensive war. promised to restore Maestricht to them, and Maestricht was the only place that remained unrecovered of all they had loft. They dropped Spain at Nimeghen, as they had dropped France at Munster, but many circumstances concurred to give a much worse grace to their abandoning of Spain,

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. than to their abandoning of France. I need not specify them. This only I would observe: when they made a separate peace at Munster, they left an ally who was in condition to carry on the war alone with advantage, and they prefumed to impose no terms upon him: when they made a separate peace at Nimeghen, they abandoned an ally who was in no condition to carry on the war alone, and who was reduced to accept whatever terms the common enemy prescribed. In their great diftress in one thousand six hundred and seventy three, they engaged to restore Maestricht to the Spaniards as foon as it should be retaken: it was not retaken, and they accepted it for themselves as the price of the separate peace they made with France. The Dutch had engaged farther, to make neither peace nor truce with the king of . France, till that prince confented to restore to Spain all he had conquered fince the Pyrenean treaty. But, far from keeping this promise in any tolerable degree, Lewis the fourteenth acquired, by the plan imposed on Spain at Nimeghen, besides the county of Burgundy, fo many other countries and towns on the fide of the ten Spanish provinces, that these, added to the places he kept of those which had been yielded

238 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7 yielded to him by the treaty of Aix la Chapelle ( for some of little consequence he restored) put into his hands the principal strength of that barrier, against which we goaded ourselves almost to death in the last great war; and made good the faying of the marshal of Schomberg, that to attack this barrier was to take the beaft by his horns. I know very well what may be faid to excuse the Dutch. The emperor was more intent to tyrannize his subjects on one fide, than to defend them on the other. He attempted little against France, and the little he did attempt was ill ordered, and worse executed. The assistance of the princes of Germany was often uncertain, and always expensive. Spain was already indebted to Holland for great fums; greater still must be advanced to her if the war continued: and experience shewed that France was able, and would continue, to prevail against her present enemies. The triple league had stopped her progress, and obliged her to abandon the county of Burgundy; but Sweden was now engaged in the war on the fide of France, as England had been in the beginning of it: and England was now privately favorable to her interests, as Sweden had been in the beginning of it. The whole

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. whole ten provinces would have been fubdued in the course of a few campaigns more: and it was better for Spain and the Dutch too, that part should be faved by accepting a fort of composition, than the whole be risqued by refusing it. This might be alledged to excuse the conduct of the States General, in imposing hard terms on Spain; in making none for their other allies, and in figning alone: by which fleps they gave France an opportunity that she improved with great dexterity of management, the opportunity of treating with the confederates one by one, and of beating them by detail in the cabinet, if I may fo fay, as she had often done in the field. I shall not compare these reasons, which were but too well founded in fact, and must appear plaufible at least, with other confiderations that might be, and were at the time, infifted upon. I confine myfelf to a few obfervations, which every knowing and impartial man must admit. Your lordship will observe, first, that the fatal principle of compounding with Lewis the fourteenth, from the time that his pretentions, his power, and the use he made of it, begun to threaten Europe, prevailed still more at Nimeghen than it had prevailed at Aix: fo that altho he did not obtain to the full

240 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7. all he attempted, yet the dominions of France were by common confent, on every treaty, more and more extended; her barriers on all fides were more and more strengthened; those of her neighbours were more and more weakened; and that power, which was to affert one day, regainst the rest of Europe, the pretended rights of the house of Bourbon to the Spanish monarchy, was more and more established, and rendered truly formidable in fuch hands at least, during the course of the first eighteen years of the period. Your lordship will please to observe, in the second place, that the extreme weakness of one branch of Austria, and the miserable conduct of both: the poverty of some of the princes of the empire, and the difunion, and, to speak plainly, the mercenary policy of all of them; in short, the confined views, the false notions, and, to speak as plainly of my own as of other nations, the iniquity of the councils of England, not only hindered the growth of this power from being stopped in time, but nursed it up into strength almost insuperable by any future confederacy. A third observation is this: If the excuses made for the conduct of the Dutch at Nimeghen are not sufficient, they too must come in for their share in this

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. 241

condemnation, even after the death of the DE WITS; as they were to be condemned most justly, during that administration, for abetting and favoring France. these excuses, grounded on their inability to purfue any longer a war, the principal profit of which was to accrue to their confederates, for that was the case after the year one thousand six hundred and seventy three, or one thousand six hundred and feventy four, and the principal burden of which was thrown on them by their confederates; if these are sufficient, they should not have acted for decency's fake as well as out of good policy, the part they did act in one thousand seven hundred and eleven and one thousand seven hundred and twelve, towards the late queen, who had complaints of the fame kind, in a much higher degree and with circumstances much more aggravating, to make of them, of the emperor, and of all the princes of Germany; and who was far from treating them and their other allies, at that time, as they treated Spain and their other allies in one thousand fix hundred and seventy eight. Immediately after the Dutch had made their peace, that of Spain was figned with France. The emperor's treaty with this crown and that of Sweden was concluded in the following

#### 242 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 7.

lowing year: and LEWIS the fourteent being now at liberty to affift his ally, whilft he had tied up the powers with whom he had treated from affifting theirs, he foon forced the king of DENMARK and the elector of BRANDENBURG to restore all they had taken from the Swedes, and to conclude the peace of the north. In all these treaties he gave the law, and he was now at the highest point of his grandeur. He continued at this point for feveral years, and in this heighth of his power he prepared those alliances against it, under the weight of which he was at last well-nigh oppressed; and might have been reduced as low as the general interest of Europe required, if some of the causes, which worked now, had not continued to work in his favor, and if his enemies had not proved, in their turn of fortune, as infatiable as prosperity had rendered him.

AFTER he had made peace with all the powers with whom he had been in war, he continued to vex both Spain and the empire, and to extend his conquests in the Low Countries, and on the Rhine, both by the pen and the sword. He erected the chambers of Metz and of Brisach, where his own subjects were prosecutors, witnesses,

and

and judges all at once. Upon the decisions of these tribunals, he seized into his own hands, under the notion of dependencies and the pretence of reunions, whatever towns or districts of country tempted his ambition, or fuited his conveniency: and added, by these and by other means, in the midst of peace, more territories to those the least treaties had yielded to him, than he could have got by continuing the war. He acted afterwards, in the support of all this, without any bounds or limits. His glory was a reason for attacking Holland in one thousand fix hundred and seventy two, and his conveniency a reason for many of the attacks he made on others afterwards. He took Luxemburg by force: he stole Strafburg; he bought Cafal: and, whilft he waited the opportunity of acquiring to his family the crown of Spain, he was not without thoughts, nor hopes perhaps, of bringing into it the imperial crown likewife. Some of the cruelties he exercised in the empire may be ascribed to his disappointment in this view: I fay fome of them, because in the war that ended by the treaty of Nimeghen, he had already exercised many. Tho the French writers endeavour to flide over them, to palliate them, and to impute them particularly to the English that

# 244 A Sketch of the HISTORY. Let. 7.

that were in their service, for even this one of their writers has the front to advance; yet these cruelties unheard of among civilized nations, must be granted to have been ordered by the counsels, and executed by the arms of France, in the Palatinate, and in other parts.

IF LEWIS the fourteenth could have contented himself with the acquisitions that were confirmed to him by the treaties of one thousand fix hundred and seventy eight, and one thousand six hundred and feventy nine, and with the authority and reputation which he then gained; it is plain that he would have prevented the alliances that were afterwards formed against him; and that he might have regained his credit amongst the princes of the empire, where he had one family-alliance by the marriage of his brother to the daughter of the elector Palatine, and another by that of his fon to the fifter of the elector of BAVARIA; where Sweden was closely attached to him, and where the same principles of private intereft would have foon attached others as closely. He might have remained not only the principal, but the directing power of Europe, and have held this rank with all the glory imaginable, till the death of the

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. 245 king of Spain, or some other object of great ambition, had determined him to act another part. But, instead of this, he continued to vex and provoke all those who were, unhappily for them, his neighbours, and that, in many instances, for trifles. An example of this kind occurs to me. On the death of the duke of DEUX PONTS, he feized that little inconfiderable dutchy. without any regard to the indifputable right of the king of Sweden, to the services that crown had rendered him, or to the want he might have of that alliance hereafter. The confequence was, that Sweden entered, with the emperor, the king of Spain, the elector of Bavaria, and the States General, into the alliance of guaranty, as it was called, about the year one thousand fix hundred and eighty three, and into the famous league of Ausburg, in one thousand six hundred and eighty fix.

Since I have mentioned this league, and fince we may date from it a more general and a more concerted opposition to France than there had been before; give me leave to recal some of the reflections that have presented themselves to my mind, in considering what I have red, and what I have heard related, concerning the passages of Q 2

#### 246 ASketch of the HISTORY. Let. 7.

that time. They will be of use to form our judgment concerning later passages. If the king of France became an object of aversion on account of any invasions he made, any deviations from public faith, any barbarities exercifed where his arms prevailed, or the perfecution of his protestant fubjects; the emperor deserved to be such an object, at least as much as he, on the fame accounts. The emperor was fo too, but with this difference relatively to the political fystem of the west: the Austrian ambition and bigotry exerted themselves in distant countries, whose interests were not confidered as a part of this fystem; for, otherwise there would have been as much reason for assisting the people of Hungary and of Transylvania against the emperor, as there had been formerly for affifting the people of the feven united provinces against Spain, or as there have been lately for affifting them against France: but the ambition and bigotry of Lewis the fourteenth were exerted in the Low countries, on the Rhine, in Italy, and in Spain, in the very midst of this system, if I may say so, and with success that could not fail to subvert it in time. The power of the house of Auftria, that had been feared too long, was feared no longer: and that of the house of Bourbon.

## Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. 247

Bourbon, by having being feared too late. was now grown terrible. The emperor was fo intent on the establishment of his absolute power in Hungary, that he exposed the empire doubly to defolation and ruin for the fake of it. He left the frontier almost quite defenceless on the side of the Rhine, against the inroads and ravages of France: and by shewing no mercy to the Hungarians, nor keeping any faith with them, he forced that miferable people into alliances with the Turk, who invaded the empire and besieged Vienna. Even this event had no effect upon him. Your lordship will find, that Sobieski king of Poland, who had forced the Turks to raife the fiege, and had fixed the imperial crown that tottered on his head, could not prevail on him to take those measures by which alone it was possible to cover the empire, to secure the King of Spain, and to reduce that power who was probably one day to dispute with him this prince's fuccession. TEKELI and the malecontents made fuch demands as none but a tyrant could refuse, the prefervation of their ancient privileges, liberty of conscience, the convocation of a free diet or parliament, and others of less importance. All was in vain. The war continued with them, and with the Turks,

### 248 A Sketch of the HISTORY. Let. 7.

and France was left at liberty to push her enterprises almost without opposition, against Germany and the Low Countries. The diffress in both was so great, that the States General faw no other expedient for stopping the progress of the French arms, than a cessation of hostilities, or a truce of twenty years; which they negotiated, and which was accepted by the emperor and the king of Spain, on the terms that Lewis the fourteenth thought fit to offer. By these terms he was to remain in full and quiet possession of all he had acquired fince the years one thousand fix hundred and seventy eight, and one thousand fix hundred and feventy nine; among which acquisitions that of Luxemburg and that of Strasburg were comprehended. The conditions of this truce were so advantageous to France, that all their intrigues were employed to obtain a definitive treaty of peace upon the fame conditions. But this was neither the interest nor the intention of the other contracting powers. The imperial arms had been very successful against the Turks. This fuccess, as well as the troubles that followed upon it in the Ottoman armies, and at the Porte, gave a reasonable expectation of concluding a peace on that side: and, this peace concluded, the emperor, and the

Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. 249

the empire, and the king of Spain would have been in a much better posture to treat with France. With these views, that were wife and just, the league of Ausburg was made between the emperor, the kings of Spain and Sweden as princes of the empire, and the other circles and princes. This league was purely defensive. An express article declared it to be fo: and as it had no other regard, it was not only conformable to the laws and constitutions of the empire, and to the practice of all nations, but even to the terms of the act of truce fo lately concluded. This pretence therefore for breaking the truce, feizing the electorate of Cologn, invading the Palatinate, befleging Philipsburg, and carrying unexpected and undeclared war into the empire, could not be supported: nor is it possible to read the reasons published by France at this time, and drawn from her fears of the imperial power, without laughter. little pretence was there to complain, that the emperor refused to convert at once the truce into a definitive treaty; fince, if he had done fo, he would have confirmed in a lump, and without any discussion, all the arbitrary decrees of those chambers, or courts, that France had erected to cover her usurpations; and would have given up

250 A Sketch of the HISTORY. Let. 7. almost a fixth part of the provinces of the empire, that France one way or other had possessed herself of. The pretensions of the Dutchess of Orleanson the succession of her father, and her brother, which were difputed by the then elector Palatine, and were to be determined by the laws and customs of the empire, afforded as little pretence for beginning this war, as any of the former allegations. The exclusion of the cardinal of FURSTENBERG, who had been elected to the archbishopric of Cologn, was capable of being aggravated: but even in this case his most christian majesty opposed his judgment and his authority against the judgment and authority of that holy father, whose eldest son he was proud to be called. In fhort, the true reason why Lewis the fourteenth began that cruel war with the empire, two years after he had concluded a ceffation of hostilities for twenty, was this: he refolved to keep what he had got; and therefore he resolved to encourage the Turks to continue the war. He did this effectually. by invading Germany at the very instant when the Sultan was fuing for peace. Notwithstanding this, the Turks were in treaty again the following year: and good policy should have obliged the emperor, fince he could not hope to carry on this war and that against.

against Fracne, at the same time, with vigor and effect, to conclude a peace with the least dangerous enemy of the two. The decision of this dispute with France could not be deferred, his defigns against the Hungarians were in part accomplished, for his fon was declared king, and the fettlement of that crown in his family was made; and the rest of these, as well as those that he formed against the Turks, might be deferred. But the councils of Vienna judged differently, and infifted even at this critical moment on the most exorbitant terms: on some of such a nature, that the Turks shewed more humanity and a better sense of religion in refusing, than they in asking them. Thus the war went on in Hungary, and proved a constant diversion in tayor of France, during the whole course of that which Lewis the fourteenth began at this time; for the treaty of Carlowitz was posterior to that of Ryswic. The empire, Spain, England, and Holland engaged in the war with France and on them the emperor left the burden of it. In the short war of one thousand six hundred and sixty feven, he was not fo much as a party, and instead of affishing the king of Spain, which, it must be owned, he was in no good condition of doing, he bargained for dividing

### 252 A Sketch of the HISTORY. Let.7.

that prince's fuccession, as I have observed above. In the war of one thousand fix hundred and feventy two he made fome feeble efforts. In this of one thousand fix hundred and eighty eight he did still less: and in the war which broke out at the beginning of the present century he did nothing, at least after the first campaign in Italy, and afer the engagements that England and Holland took by the grand alliance. In a word, from the time that an opposition to France became a common cause in Europe, the house of Austria has been a clog upon it in many instances, and of confiderable affiftance to it in none. The accession of England to this cause, which was brought about by the revolution of one thousand fix hundred and eighty eight, might have made amends, and more than amends, one would think, for this defect, and have thrown superiority of power and of fuccess on the side of the confederates, with whom she took part against This, I fay, might be imagined, without over-rating the power of England, or undervaluing that of France; and it was imagined at that time. How it proved otherwise in the event; how France came triumphant out of the war that ended by the treaty of Ryswic, and tho she gave up

# Let. 7. and State of EUROPE. 253 a great deal, yet preserved the greatest and the best part of her conquests and acquisitions made since the treaties of Westphalia, and the Pyrenées; how she acquired, by the gift of Spain, that whole monarchy for one of her princes, tho she had no reason to expect the least part of it without a war at one time, nor the great lot of it even by a war at any time; in short, how she wound up advantageously the ambitious system she had been sifty years in weaving; how she

concluded a war, in which she was defeated on every side, and wholly exhausted, with little diminution of the provinces and barriers acquired to France, and with the quiet possession of Spain and the Indies to a prince of the house of Bourbon: all this, my lord, will be the subject of your researches, when you come down to the latter part of the last

period of modern history.

to the state of th and the first of the section of the 400 to 100 miles 62 00 2 10 20 a committee to be to be the state of the A Company of the second of the Land Committee of the C A State of the Law State Show that 相当,1000年11月1日 English Committee Committee Committee Committee 

# LETTER VIII.

The same subject continued from the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-eight.

TOUR lordship will find, that the objects proposed by the alliance of one thousand six hundred and eighty nine between the emperor and the States, to which England acceded, and which was the foundation of the whole confederacy then formed. were no less than to restore all things to the terms of the Westphalian and Pyrenean treaties, by the war; and to preserve them in that state, after the war, by a defensive alliance and guaranty of the fame confederate powers against France. The particular as well as general meaning of this engagement was plain enough: and if it had not been so, the sense of it would have been fufficiently determined, by that feparate article, in which England and Holland obliged themselves to assist the "house

256 A Sketch of the HISTORY. Let. 8.

" of Austria, in taking and keeping pof-" fession of the Spanish monarchy, when-" ever the case should happen of the death " of CHARLES the fecond, without lawful " heirs." This engagement was double, and thereby relative to the whole political fystem of Europe, alike affected by the power and pretentions of France. Hitherto the power of France had been alone regarded, and her pretentions feemed to have been forgot: or to what purpole should they have been remembered, whilst Europe was fo unhappily constituted, that the states, at whose expence she increased her power, and their friends and allies, thought that they did enough upon every occasion if they made some tolerable composition with her? They who were not in circumstances to refuse confirming present, were little likely to take effectual measures against future usurpations. But now, as the alarm was greater than ever, by the outrages that France had committed, and the intrigues she had carried on; by the little regard she had shewn to public faith, and by the airs of authority she had assumed twenty years together: fo was the spirit against her raised to an higher pitch, and the means of reducing her power, or at least of checking it, were increased. princes

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. princes and states who had neglected or favored the growth of this power, which all of them had done in their turns, faw their error; faw the necessity of repairing it, and faw that unless they could check the power of France, by uniting a power fuperior to her's, it would be impossible to hinder her from fucceeding in her great defigns on the Spanish succession. court of England had fubmitted, not many years before, to abet her usurpations, and the king of England had stooped to be her pensioner. But the crime was not national. On the contrary, the nation had cried out loudly against it, even whilst it was committing: and as foon as ever the abdication of king JAMES, and the elevation of the prince of ORANGE to the throne of England happened, the nation engaged with all imaginable zeal in the common cause of Europe, to reduce the exorbitant power of France, to prevent her future and to revenge her past attempts; for even a fpirit of revenge prevailed, and the war was a war of anger as well as of interest.

UNHAPPILY this zeal was neither well conducted, nor well feconded. It was zeal without fuccess in the first of the two wars

### 258 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

that followed the year one thousand six hundred and eighty-eight; and zeal without knowledge, in both of them. I enter into no detail concerning the events of these two wars. This only I observe on the first of them, that the treaties of Ryswic were far from answering the ends proposed and the engagements taken by the first grand alliance. The power of France. with respect to extent of dominions and strength of barrier, was not reduced to the terms of the Pyrenean treaty, no not to those of the treaty of Nimeghen. Lorrain was restored indeed with very considerable referves, and the places taken or usurped on the other fide of the Rhine: but then Strafburg was yielded up absolutely to France by the emperor, and by the empire. The concessions to Spain were great, but fo were the conquests and the encroachments made upon her by France, fince the treaty of Nimeghen: and she got little at Ryfwic, I believe nothing more than she had faved at Nimeghen before. All thefe concessions, however, as well as the acknowledgement of king WILLIAM, and others made by LEWIS the fourteenth after he had taken Ath and Barcelona, even during the course of the negotiations, compared with the losses and repeated defeats

## Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 259

of the allies and the ill state of the confederacy, furprised the generality of mankind, who had not been accustomed to so much moderation and generolity on the part of this prince. But the pretentions of the house of Bourbon on the Spanish succesfion remained the fame. Nothing had been done to weaken them; nothing was prepared to oppose them: and the opening of this fuccession was visibly at hand: for CHARLES the fecond had been in immediate danger of dying about this time. His death could not be a remote event: and all the good queen's endeavours to be got with child had proved ineffectual. league dissolved, all the forces of the confederates dispersed, and many disbanded; France continuing armed, her forces by fea and land increased and held in readiness to act on all sides, it was plain that the confederates had failed in the first object of the grand alliance, that of reducing the power of France; by fucceeding in which alone they could have been able to keep the fecond engagement, that of fecuring the fuccession of Spain to the house of Austria.

AFTER this peace, what remained to be done? In the whole nature of things there R 2 remained

### 260 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let .8

remained but three. To abandon all care of the Spanish succession was one; to compound with France upon this fuccession was another; and to prepare, like her, during the interval of peace, to make an advantageous war whenever Charles the fecond should die, was a third. Now the first of these was to leave Spain, and, in leaving Spain, to leave all Europe in fome fort at the mercy of France; fince whatever disposition the Spaniards should make of their crown, they were quite unable to support it against France; since the emperor could do little without his alliance; and fince Bavaria, the third pretender. could do ftill lefs, and might find, in fuch a case, his account perhaps better in treating with the house of Bourbon than with that of Austria. More needs not be said on this head; but on the other two, which I shall consider together, several facts are proper to be mentioned, and feveral reflections necessary to be made.

WE might have counter-worked, no doubt, in their own methods of policy, the councils of France, who made peace to dissolve the confederacy, and great concessions, with very suspicious generosity, to gain the Spaniards: we might have waited,

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 261 like them, that is in arms, the death of CHARLES the second, and have fortified in the mean time the dispositions of the king, the court, and people of Spain, against the pretensions of France: we might have made the peace, which was made some time after that, between the emperor and the Turks, and have obliged the former at any rate to have secured the peace of Hungary, and to have prepared, by these and other expedients, for the war that would inevitably break out on the death of the king of Spain.

Bur all fuch measures were rendered impracticable, by the emperor chiefly. Experience had shewn, that the powers who engaged in alliance with him must expect to take the whole burden of his cause upon themselves; and that Hungary would maintain a perpetual diversion in favor of France, fince he could not refolve to lighten the tyrannical yoke he had established in that country and in Transilvania, nor his ministers to part with the immense confiscations they had appropriated to themselves. Past experience shewed this: and the experience that followed confirmed it very fatally. But further; there was not only little affiftance to be expected from him by R 3 thole

### 262 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

those who should engage in his quarrel: he did them hurt of another kind, and deprived them of many advantages by false measures of policy and unskilful negotiations. Whilst the death of CHARLES the fecond was expected almost daily, the court of Vienna feemed to have forgot the court of Madrid, and all the pretentions on that crown. When the count D'HARRACH was fent thither, the imperial councils did fomething worfe. The king of Spain was ready to declare the archduke CHARLES his fuccessor; he was desirous to have this. young prince fent into Spain: the bent of the people was in favor of Austria, or it had been fo, and might have been eafily turned the fame way again: at court no cabal was yet formed in favor of Bourbon, and a very weak intrigue was on foot in favor of the electorial prince of BAVA-Not only Charles might have been on the fpot ready to reap the succession, but a German army might have been there to defend it; for the court of Madrid infifted on having twelve thousand of these troops, and, rather than not to have them offered to contribute to the payment of them privately: because it would have been too impopular among the Spaniards, and too prejudicial to the Austrian interest, to have had

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. had it known that the emperor declined the payment of a body of his own troops that were demanded to fecure that monarchy to his fon. These proposals were half refused, and half evaded: and in return to the offer of the crown of Spain to the archduke, the imperial councils asked the government of Milan for him. They thought it a point of deep policy to fecure the Italian provinces, and to leave to England and Holland the care of the Low countries, of Spain, and the Indies. By declining these proposals the house of Austria renounced in fome fort the whole fuccession: at least she gave England and Holland reasons, whatever engagements these powers had taken, to refuse the harder task of putting her into possession by force; when she might, and would not, procure to the English and Dutch, and her other allies, the easier task of defending her in this possession.

I said that the measures mentioned above were rendered impracticable, by the emperor chiefly, because they were rendered so likewise by other circumstances at the same conjuncture. A principal one I shall mention, and it shall be drawn from the state of our own country, and the disposition of our people. Let us take this up

### 264 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

from king William's accession to our crown. During the whole progress that Lewis the fourteenth made towards fuch exorbitant power, as gave him well grounded hopes of acquiring at last to his family the Spanish monarchy, England had been either an idle spectator of all that passed on the continent, or a faint and uncertain ally against France, or a warm and fure ally on her fide, or a partial mediator between her and the powers confederated in. The revolution their common defence. produced as great a change in our foreign conduct, as in our domestic establishment: and our nation engaged with great spirit in the war of one thousand six hundred and eighty eight. But then this spirit was rash, prefumptuous, and ignorant, ill conducted at home, and ill feconded abroad: all which has been touched already. We had waged no long wars on the continent, nor been very deeply concerned in foreign confederacies, fince the fourteenth and fifteenth centuries. The history of EDWARD the third, however, and of the first twelve or fifteen years of HENRY the fixth might have taught us some general but useful lessons, drawn from remote times, but applicable to the present. So might the example of HENRY the eighth, who squandered away great

great fums for the profit of taking a town or the honor of having an emperor in his pay; and who divided afterwards by treaty the kingdom of France between himfelf and CHARLES the fifth, with fuccess so little answerable to such an undertaking, that it is hard to believe his imperial and English majesty were both in earnest. If they were fo, they were both the bubbles of their prefumption. But it feems more likely that HENRY the eighth was bubbled on this occasion by the great hopes that CHARLES held out to flatter his vanity: as he had been bubbled by his father-in-law FERDINAND, at the beginning of his reign, in the war of Navarre. But these reflections were not made, nor had we enough confidered the example of ELIZABETH, the last of our princes who had made any confiderable figure abroad, and from whom we might have learned to act with vigor, but to engage with caution, and always to proportion our affiftance according to our abilities, and the real necessities of our al-The frontiers of France were now lies. fo fortified, her commerce and her naval force were so encreased, her armies were grown fo numerous, her troops were fo disciplined, so inured to war, and so animated by a long course of successful campaigns,

### 266 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

paigns, that they who looked on the fituation of Europe could not fail to fee how difficult the enterprise of reducing her power Difficult as it was, we were was become. obliged, on every account and by reasons of all kinds, to engage in it: but then we should have engaged with more forecast. and have conducted ourselves in the management of it, not with less alacrity and spirit, but with more order, more oeconomy, and a better application of our efforts. But they who governed were glad to engage us at any rate: and we entered on this great scheme of action, as our nation is too apt to do, hurried on by the ruling passion of the day. I have been told by feveral, who were on the stage of the world at this time, that the generality of our people believed, and were encouraged to believe, the war could not be long, if the king was vigoroufly fupported: and there is a humdrum speech of a speaker of the house of commons, I think, who humbly defired his majesty to take this opportunity of reconquering his ancient dutchy of Aquitain. We were foon awakened from these gaudy dreams. In feven or eight years no impression had been made on France, that was befreged as it were on every fide: and after repeated defeats in the

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. Low Countries, where king WILLIAM laid the principal stress of the war, his sole triumph was the retaking of Namur, that had been taken by the French a few years before. Unfustained by fuccess abroad, we are not to wonder that the spirit flagged at home; nor that the discontents of those who were averse to the established government, uniting with the far greater number of those who disliked the administration, inflamed the general discontents of the nation, oppressed with taxes, pillaged by usurers, plundered at sea, and disappointed at land. As we run into extremes always, fome would have continued this war at any rate, even at the fame rate: but it was not possible they should prevail in such a situation of affairs, and fuch a disposition of They who got by the war, and made immense fortunes by the necessities of the public, were not fo numerous nor fo powerful, as they have been fince. moneyed interest was not yet a rival able to cope with the landed interest, either in the nation or in parliament. The great corporations that had been erected more to ferve the turn of party, than for any real national use, aimed indeed even then at the strength and

influence which they have fince acquired in the legislature; but they had not made the fame progress by promoting national corrup-

tion,

### 268 A Sketch of the HISTORY - Let. 8.

tion, as they and the court have made fince. In short, the other extreme prevailed. The generality of people grew as fond of getting out of the war, as they had been of entering into it: and thus far perhaps, considering how it had been conducted, they were not much to be blamed. But this was not all; for when king WILLIAM had made the peace, our martial spirit became at once so pacific, that we seemed resolved to meddle no more in the affairs of the continent, at least to employ our arms no more in the quarrels that might arise there: and accordingly we reduced our troops in England to seven thousand men.

I HAVE fometimes confidered, in reflecting on these passages, what I should have done, if I had fat in parliament at that time; and have been forced to own myself, that I should have voted for disbanding the army then; as I voted in the following parliament for centuring the partition-trea-I am forced to own this, because I remember how imperfect my notions were of the situation of Europe in that extraordinary crisis, and how much I saw the true interest of my own country in an half light. But, my lord, I own it with some shame; because in truth nothing could be more abfurd than the conduct we held. What! because

### Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 269

because we had not reduced the power of France by the war, nor excluded the house of Bourbon from the Spanish succession, nor compounded with her upon it by the peace; and because the house of Austria had not helped herfelf, nor put it into our power to help her with more advantage and better prospect of succes---were we to leave that whole fuccession open to the invasions of France, and to fuffer even the contingency to fubfift, of feeing those monarchies united? What! because it was become extravagant, after the trials fo lately made, to think ourselves any longer engaged by treaty, or obliged by good policy, to put the house of Austria in possession of the whole Spanish monarchy, and to defend her in this possession by force of arms, were we to leave the whole at themercy of France? If we were not to do fo, if we were not to do one of the three things that I faid above remained to be done, and if the emperor put it out of our power to do another of them with advantage; were we to put it still more out of our power, and to wait unarmed for the death of the king of Spain? In fine, if we had not the prospect of disputing with France, fo fuccessfully as we might have had it, the Spanish succession, whenever it should be open; were we not only

### 270 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

to shew by disarming, that we would not dispute it at all, but to censure likewise the second of the three things mentioned above, and which king William put in practice, the compounding with France, to prevent if possible a war, in which we were averse to engage?

ALLow me to push these reflections a little further, and to observe to your lordship, that if the proposal of fending the archduke into Spain had been accepted in time by the imperial court, and taken effect and become a measure of the confederacy, that war indeed would have been protracted; but France could not have hindered the passage of this prince and his German forces: and our fleet would have been better employed in escorting them, and in covering the coasts of Spain and of the dominions of that crown both in Europe and in America, than it was in fo many unmeaning expeditions from the battle of La Hogue to the end of the war. France indeed would have made her utmost efforts to have had fatisfaction on her pretensions, as ill founded as they were. She would have ended that war, as we began the next, when we demanded a reasonable satisfaction for the emperor: and tho I think that the allies would have

have had, in very many respects, more advantages in defending Spain, than in attacking France; yet, upon a supposition that the defence would have been as ill conducted as the attack was, and that by confequence, whether CHARLES the fecond had lived to the conclusion of this war, or had died before it, the war must have ended in fome partition or other; this partition would have been made by the Spaniards themselves. They had been forced to compound with France on her former pretentions, and they must and they would have compounded on these, with an Austrian prince on the throne, just as they compounded, and probably much better than they compounded, on the pretensions we supported against them, when they had a prince of Bourbon on their throne. France could not have diffressed the Spaniards, nor have over-run their monarchy, if they had been united; and they would have been united in this case, and supported by the whole confederacy: as we distressed both France and them, over-run their monarchy in one hemisphere, and might have done fo in both, when they were difunited, and fupported by France alone. France would not have acted, in fuch negotiations, the ridiculous part which the emperor acted in

### 272 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8

those that led to the peace of Utrecht, nor have made her bargain worse by neglecting to make it in time. But the war ending as it did, tho I cannot fee how king WILLIAM could avoid leaving the crown of Spain and that entire monarchy at the discretion of Lewis the fourteenth, otherwise than by compounding to prevent a new war he was in no fort prepared to make; yet it is undeniable, that, by confenting to a partition of their monarchy, he threw the Spaniards into the arms of France. The first partition might have taken place, perhaps, if the electoral prince of BAVARIA had lived. whom the French and Spaniards too would have feen much more willingly than the archduke on the throne of Spain. among all the parties into which that court was divided in one thousand fix hundred and ninety eight, when this treaty was made. that of Austria was grown the weakest, by the difgust taken at a German queen, and at the rapacity and infolence of her favor-The French were looked upon with esteem and kindness at Madrid; but the Germans were become, or growing to be, objects of contempt to the ministers, and of aversion to the people. The electoral prince died in one thousand fix hundred and ninety nine. The star of Austria, so fatal to all thofe

Let.8. and State of EUROPE. those who were obstacles to the ambition of that house, prevailed; as the elector expressed himself in the first pangs of his grief. The state of things changed very much by his death. The archduke was to have Spain and the Indies, according to a fecond partition: and the Spaniards, who had expressed great resentment at the first, were pushed beyond their bearing by this. They foon appeared to be fo; for the fecond treaty of partition was figned in March one thousand seven hundred; and the will was made, to the best of my remembrance, in the October following. I shall not enter here into many particulars concerning thefe great events. They will be related faithfully, and I hope fully explained, in a work which your lordship may take the trouble very probably of perufing fome time or other, and which I shall rather leave, than give to the public. Something however must be said more, to continue and wind up this fummary of the latter period of modern history.

FRANCE then faw her advantage, and improved it no doubt, tho not in the manner, nor with the circumstances, that some lying scriblers of memorials and anecdotes have advanced. She had sent one of the S ablest

274 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 3 ablest men of her court to that of Madrid, the marshal of HARCOURT, and she had stipulated in the second treaty of partition, that the archduke should go neither into Spain nor the dutchy of Milan, during the life of CHARLES the second. She was willing to have her option between a treaty and a will. By the acceptation of the will, all king WILLIAM's measures were broke. He was unprepared for war as much as when he made these treaties to prevent one; and if he meant in making them, what some wife, but refining men have suspected, and what I confess I see no reason to believe, only to gain time by the difficulty of executing them, and to prepare for making war, whenever the death of the king of Spain should alarm mankind, and rouze his own subjects out of their inactivity and neglect of foreign interests: if so, he was disappointed in that too; for France took possession of the whole monarchy at once, and with universal concurrence, at least without opposition or difficulty, in favor of the duke of Anjou. By what has been observed, or hinted rather very shortly, and I fear a little confusedly, it is plain that reducing the power of France, and fecuring the whole Spanish succession to the house of Austria, were two points that king WILLIAM

Let.8. and State of EUROPE. WILLIAM, at the head of the British and Dutch commonwealths and of the greatest confederacy Europe had feen, was obliged. to give up. All the acquisitions that France cared to keep for the maintenance of her power were confirmed to her by the treaty of Ryswic: and king WILLIAM allowed, indirectly at least, the pretentions of the house of Bourbon to the Spanish succession, as Lewis the fourteenth allowed, in the fame manner, those of the house of Austria, by the treaties of partition. Strange fituation! in which no expedient remained to prepare for an event, visibly so near, and of fuch vast importance as the death of the king of Spain, but a partition of his monarchy, without his confent, or his knowledge! If king WILLIAM had not made this partition, the emperor would have made one, and with as little regard to trade, to the barrier of the feven provinces, or to the general fystem of Europe, as had been shewed by him when he made the private treaty with France already mentioned, in one thousand fix hundred and fixty eight. The ministers of Vienna were not wanting to infinuate to those of France overtures of a feparate treaty, as more conducive to their common interests than the accession of his imperial majesty to that of partition.

276 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. But the councils of Verfailles judged very reasonably, that a partition made with England and Holland would be more effectual than any other, if a partition was to take place: and that fuch a partition would be just as effectual as one made with the emperor, to furnish arguments to the emissaries of France, and motives to the Spanish councils, if a will in favor of France could be obtained. I repeat it again; I cannot fee what king WILLIAM could do in fuch. circumstances as he found himself in after thirty years struggle, except what he did: neither can I fee how he could do what he did, especially after the resentment expressed by the Spaniards, and the furious memorial prefented by Canales on the conclusion of the first treaty of partition, without apprehending that the confequence would be a will in favor of France. was in the worst of all political circumstances, and that wherein no one good meafure remains to be taken; and out of which he left the two nations, at the head of whom he had been fo long, to fight and negotiate themselves and their confederates, as well as they could.

When this will was made and accepted, Lewis the fourteenth had fucceeded, and the

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. the powers in opposition to him had failed. in all the great objects of interest and ambition, which they had kept in fight for more than forty years; that is, from the beginning of the prefent period. The actors changed their parts in the tragedy that fol-The power, that had so long and fo cruelly attacked, was now to defend, the Spanish monarchy: and the powers, that had fo long defended, were now to attack it. Let us fee how this was brought about: and that we may fee it the better, and make a better judgment of all that paffed from the death of CHARLES the fecond to the peace of Utrecht, let us go back to the time of his death, and confider the circumstances that formed this complicated state of affairs in three views; a view of right, a view of policy, and a view of power.

The right of succeeding to the crown of Spain would have been undoubtedly in the children of Maria Theresa, that is, in the house of Bourbon; if this right had not been barred by the solemn renunciations so often mentioned. The pretensions of the house of Austria were founded on these renunciations, on the ratification of them by the Pyrenean treaty, and the confirmation of them by the will of Philip the fourth.

S 3

The

278 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

The pretenfions of the house of Bourbon were founded on a supposition, it was indeed no more, and a vain one too, that thefe renunciations were in their nature null. this foot the dispute of right stood during the life of CHARLES the second, and on the fame it would have continued to stand even after his death, if the renunciations had remained unshaken; it his will, like that of his father, had confirmed them, and had left the crown, in pursuance of them, to the house of Austria. But the will of CHARLES the fecond, annulling theferrenunciations, took away the fole foundation of the Austrian pretensions; for, however this act might be obtained, it was just as valid as his father's, and was confirmed by the universal concurrence of the Spanish nation to the new fettlement he made of that crown. Let it be, as I think it ought to be, granted, that the true heirs could not claim against renunciations that were, if I may fay fo, conditions of their birth: but CHARLES the fecond had certainly as good a right to change the course of succession agreeable to the order of nature and the constitution of that monarchy, after his true heirs were born, as PHILIP the fourth had to change it, contrary to this order and this constitution, before they were born, or at

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. any other time. He had as good a right, in short, to dispense with the Pyrenean treaty, and to fet it alide in this respect, as his father had to make it: fo that the renunciations being annulled by that party to the Pyrenean treaty who had exacted them, they could be deemed no longer binding, by virtue of this treaty, on the party who had made them. The fole question that remained therefore between these rival nouses, as to right, was this, whether the engagements taken by Lewis the fourteenth in the partition treaties obliged him to adhere to the terms of the last of them in all events, and to deprive his family of the fucceffion which the king of Spain opened, and the Spanish nation offered to them; rather than to depart from a composition he had made, on pretentions that were disputable then, but were now out of dispute? It may be faid, and it was faid, that the treaties of partition being absolute, without any condition or exception relative to any dispofition the king of SPAIN had made or might make of his fuccession, in favor of Bourbon or Austria; the disposition made by his will, in favor of the duke of An. jou, could not affect the engagements fo lately taken by Lewis the fourteenth in these treaties, nor dispense with a literal 5 4

280 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. observation of them. This might be true on strict principles of justice; but I apprehend that none of these powers, who exclaimed so loudly against the perfidy of France in this case, would have been more scrupulous in a parallel case. The maxim ' fummum jus est fumma injuria' would have been quoted, and the rigid letter of treaties would have been foftened by an equitable interpretation of their spirit and intention. His imperial majesty, above all, had not the least color of right to exclaim against France on this occasion; for in general, if his family was to be stripped of all the dominions they have acquired by breach of faith, and means much worse than the acceptation of the will, even allowing all the invidious circumstances imputed to the conduct of France to be true, the Austrian family would fink from their present grandeur to that low state they were in two or In particular, the three centuries ago. emperor, who had conftantly refused to accede to the treaties of partition, or to submit to the dispositions made by them, had not the least plausible pretence to object to Lewis the fourteenth, that he departed from them. Thus, I think, the right of the two houses stood on the death of CHARLES the fecond. The right of the Spaniards,

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 281 an independent nation, to regulate their own fuccession, or to receive the prince whom their dying monarch had called to it; and the right of England and Holland to regulate the fuccession, to divide, and parcel out this monarchy in different lots, it would be equally foolish to go about to establish. One is too evident, the other too abfurd, to admit of any proof. But enough has been faid concerning right, which was in truth little regarded by any of the parties concerned immediately or remotely in the whole course of these proceedings. Particular interests were alone regarded, and these were pursued as ambition, fear, refentment, and vanity directed: I mean the ambition of the two houses contending for superiority of power; the fear of England and Holland left this superiority should become too great in either; the refentment of Spain at the difmemberment of that monarchy projected by the partition-treaties; and the vanity of that nation, as well as the princes of the house of Bourbon: for as vanity mingled with refentment to make the will, vanity had a great share in determining the acceptation of it.

LET us now confider the same conjuncture in a view of policy. The policy of the Spanish councils was this. They could not brook that their monarchy should be divided: and this principle is expressed strongly in the will of CHARLES the fecond, where he exhorts his subjects not to suffer any different or diminution of a monarchy founded by his predecessors with fo much glory. Too weak to hinder this difmemberment by their own strength, too well apprifed of the little force and little views of the court of Vienna, and their old allies having engaged to procure this difmemberment even by force of arms; nothing remained for them to do, upon this principle, but to detach France from the engagements of the partition treaties, by giving their whole monarchy to a prince of the house of Bourbon. As much as may have been faid concerning the negotiations of France to obtain a will in her favor. and yet to keep in referve the advantages stipulated for her by the partition-treaties if fuch a will could not be obtained, and tho I am perfuaded that the marshal of HARCOURT, who helped to procure this will, made his court to Lewis the fourteenth as much as the marshal of TALLARD,

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 283 who negotiated the partitions; yet it is certain, that the acceptation of the will was not a measure definitely taken at Verfailles when the king of Spain died. The alternative divided those councils, and, without entering at this time into the arguments urged on each side, adhering to the partitions seemed the cause of France, accepting the will that of the house of Bourbon.

It has been faid by men of great weight in the councils of Spain, and was faid at that time by men as little fond of the house of Bourbon, or of the French nation, as their fathers had been; that if England and Holland had not formed a confederacy and begun a war, they would have made PHILIP the fifth as good a Spaniard as any of the preceding PHILIPS, and not have endured the influence of French councils in the administration of their government: but that we threw them entirely into the hands of France when we began the war, because the fleets and armies of this crown being necessary to their defence, they could not avoid fubmitting to this influence as long as the same necessity continued; and, in fact, we have feen that the influence lasted no longer. But notwithstanding this, it must be confessed, that a war was unavoidable.

LET us now confider the same conjuncture in a view of policy. The policy of the Spanish councils was this. They could not brook that their monarchy should be divided: and this principle is expressed strongly in the will of CHARLES the fecond, where he exhorts his subjects not to suffer any difmemberment or diminution of a monarchy founded by his predecessors with fo much glory. Too weak to hinder this dismemberment by their own strength, too well apprised of the little force and little views of the court of Vienna, and their old allies having engaged to procure this difmemberment even by force of arms; nothing remained for them to do, upon this principle, but to detach France from the engagements of the partition treaties, by giving their whole monarchy to a prince of the house of Bourbon. As much as may have been faid concerning the negotiations of France to obtain a will in her favor, and yet to keep in referve the advantages stipulated for her by the partition-treaties if fuch a will could not be obtained, and tho I am perfuaded that the marshal of HARCOURT, who helped to procure this will, made his court to Lewis the fourteenth as much as the marshal of TALLARD,

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 283 who negotiated the partitions; yet it is certain, that the acceptation of the will was not a measure definitely taken at Verfailles when the king of Spain died. The alternative divided those councils, and, without entering at this time into the arguments urged on each side, adhering to the partitions seemed the cause of France, accepting the will that of the house of Bourbon.

It has been faid by men of great weight in the councils of Spain, and was faid at that time by men as little fond of the house of Bourbon, or of the French nation, as their fathers had been; that if England and Holland had not formed a confederacy and begun a war, they would have made PHILIP the fifth as good a Spaniard as any of the preceding Philips, and not have endured the influence of French councils in the administration of their government: but that we threw them entirely into the hands of France when we began the war, because the fleets and armies of this crown being necessary to their defence, they could not avoid fubmitting to this influence as long as the fame necessity continued; and, in fact, we have feen that the influence lasted no longer. But notwithstanding this, it must be confessed, that a war was unavoid-

284 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. able. The immediate fecuring of commerce and of barriers, the preventing an union of the two monarchies in some future time. and the prefervation of a certain degree at least of equality in the scales of power, were points too important to England, Holland, and the rest of Europe, to be rested on the moderation of French, and the vigor of Spanish councils, under a prince of the house of France. If satisfaction to the house of Austria, to whose rights England and Holland shewed no great regard whilft they were better founded than they were fince the will, had been alone concerned; a drop of blood spilt, or five shillings spent in the quarrel, would have been too much profusion. But this was properly the scale into which it became the common interest to throw all the weight that could be taken out of that of Bourbon. And therefore your lordship will find, that when negotiations with D'Avaux were fet on foot in Holland to prevent a war, or rather on our part to gain time to prepare for it, in which view the Dutch and we had both acknowledged Philip king of Spain; the great article we infifted on was, that reasonable satisfaction should be given the emperor, upon his pretentions founded on the treaty of partition. We could

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 285 could do no otherwise; and France, who offered to make the treaty of Ryswic the foundation of that treaty, could do no otherwife than refuse to consent that the treaty of partition should be so, after accepting the will, and thereby engaging to oppose all partition or diffmemberment of the Spanish monarchy. I should mention none of the other demands of England and Holland, if I could neglect to point out to your lordship's observation, that the same artifice was employed at this time, to perplex the more a negotiation that could not fucceed on other accounts, as we faw employed in the course of the war, by the English and Dutch ministers, to prevent the success of negotiations that might, and ought to have fucceeded. The demand I mean is that of " a liberty not only to explain the terms " proposed, but to increase or amplify " them in the course of the negotiation." I do not remember the words, but this is the fense, and this was the meaning of the confederates in both cases.

In the former, king WILLIAM was determined to begin the war by all the rules of good policy; fince he could not obtain, nay fince France could not grant in that conjuncture, nor without being forced to it by a war, what he was obliged by these very

286 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. very rules to demand. He intended therefore nothing by this negotiation, if it may be called fuch, but to preferve forms and appearances, and perhaps, which many have suspected, to have time to prepare, as I hinted just now, both abroad and at home. Many things concurred to favor his preparations abroad. The alarm, that had been given by the acceptation of the will, was increased by every step that France made to fecure the effect of it. Thus, for instance, the furprising and seizing the Dutch troops, in the fame night, and at the fame hour, that were dispersed in the garrifons of the Spanish Netherlands, was not excused by the necessity of securing those places to the obedience of Philip, nor foftened by the immediate dismission of those The impression it made was much the fame as those of the furprises and seizures of France in former usurpations. No one knew then, that the fovereignty of the ten provinces was to be yielded up to the elector of BAVARIA: and every one faw that there remained no longer any barrier between France and the feven provinces. At home, the disposition of the nation was absolutely turned to a war with France, on the death of king James the second, by the acknowledgment Lewis the fourteenth

made

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. made of his fon as king of England. know what has been faid in excuse for this measure, taken as I believe, on female importunity; but certainly without any regard to public faith, to the true interest of France in those circumstances, or to the true interest of the prince thus acknowledged, in any. It was faid, that the treaty of Ryswic obliging his most christian majesty only not to diffurb king WILLIAM in his possession, he might, without any violation of it, have acknowledged this prince as king of England; according to the political casuistry of the French, and the example of France, who finds no fault with the powers that treat with the kings of England, altho the kings of England retain the title of kings of France; as well as the example of Spain, who makes no complaints that other flat:s treat with the kings of France, altho the kings of France retain the title of Navarre. But befides that the examples are not opposite, because no other powers acknowledge in form the king of England to be king of France, nor the king of France to be king of Navarre; with what face could the French excuse this measure? Could they excuse it by urging that they adhered to the strict letter of one article of the treaty of Ryswic, against the plain mean-

ing

288 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. ing of that very article, and against the whole tenor of that treaty; in the fame breath with which they justified the acceptation of the will, by pretending they adhered to the supposed spirit and general intention of the treaties of partition, in contradiction to the letter, to the specific engagements, and to the whole purport of those treaties? This part of the conduct of Lewis the fourteenth may appear justly the more furprifing, because in most other parts of his conduct at the same time, and in some to his disadvantage, he acted cautiously, endeavoured to calm the minds of his neighbours, to reconcile Europe to his grandson's elevation, and to avoid all shew of beginning hostilities.

Tho king WILLIAM was determined to engage in a war with France and Spain, yet the same good policy, that determined him to engage, determined him not to engage too deeply. The engagement taken in the grand alliance of one thousand seven hundred and one is, "To procure an equitable and reasonable satisfaction to his imperial majesty for his pretension to the Spanish succession; and sufficient security to the king of England, and the States General, for their dominions, and for the navigation and commerce of their subjects,

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 280 " fubjects, and to prevent the union of the two monarchies of France and Spain." As king of England, as stateholder of Holland, he neither could, nor did engage any further. It may be disputed perhaps among speculative politicians, whether the balance of power in Europe would have been better preserved by that scheme of partition, which the treaties, and particularly the last of them, proposed, or by that which the grand alliance proposed to be the object of the war? I think there is little room for fuch a dispute, as I shall have occasion to say hereafter more expresly. In this place I shall only fay, that the object of this war, which king WILLIAM meditated, and queen Anne waged, was a partition, by which a prince of the house of Bourbon, already acknowledged by us and the Dutch as king of Spain, was to be left on the throne of that difmembered monar-The wisdom of those councils faw that the peace of Europe might be reftored and fecured on this foot, and that the liberties of Europe would be in no danger.

THE scales of the balance of power will never be exactly poized, nor in the precise point of equality either discernible or necessary to be discerned. It is sufficient in this,

290 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. this, as in other human affairs, that the deviation be not too great. Some there will always be. A constant attention to these deviations is therefore necessary, When they are little, their increase may be eafily prevented by early care and the precautions that good policy fuggefts. But when they become great for want of this care and these precautions, or by the force of unforeseen events, more vigor is to be exerted and greater efforts to be made. But even in fuch cases, much reflection is necessary on all the circumstances that form the conjuncture; left, by attacking with ill fuccess, the deviation be confirmed, and the power that is deemed already exorbitant become more fo; and left, by attacking with good fuccess, whilst one scale is pillaged, too much weight of power be thrown into the other. In such cases, he who has confidered, in the histories of former ages, the strange revolutions that time produces, and the perpetual flux and reflux of public as well as private fortunes, of kingdoms and states as well as of those who govern or are governed in them, will incline to think, that if the scales can be brought back by a war, nearly, tho not exactly, to the point they were at before this great deviation from it, the rest may be left to accidents.

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 201 accidents, and to the use that good policy is able to make of them.

WHEN CHARLES the fifth was at the heighth of his power, and in the zenith of his glory, when a king of France and a pope were at once his prisoners; it must be allowed, that, his fituation and that of his neighbours compared, they had as much at least to fear from him and from the house of Austria, as the neighbours of Lewis the fourteenth had to fear from him and from the house of Bourbon, when, after all his other fuccess, one of his grandchildren was placed on the Spanish throne. And yet among all the conditions of the feveral leagues against CHARLES the fifth, I do not remember that it was ever stipulated, that "no peace should be made " with him as long as he continued to be " emperor and king of Spain; nor as " long as any Austrian prince continued " capable of uniting on his head the Im-" perial and Spanish crowns."

If your lordship makes the application, you will find that the difference of some circumstances does not hinder this example from being very apposite, and strong to the present purpose. CHARLES the fifth T 2

was

292 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. was emperor and king of Spain; but neither was Lewis the fourteenth king of Spain, nor PHILIP the fifth king of France. That had happened in one instance, which it was apprehended might happen in the other. It had happened, and it was reasonably to be apprehended that it might happen again, and that the Imperial and Spanish crowns might continue, not only in the fame family, but on the fame heads; for measures were taken to fecure the fuccession of both to PHILIP the fon of CHARLES. We do not find however that any confederacy was formed, any engagement taken, or any war made, to remove or prevent this great evil. The princes and states of Europe contented themselves to oppose the designs of CHARLES. the fifth, and to check the growth of his power occasionally, and as interest invited, or necessity forced them to do; not constantly. They did perhaps too little against him, and fometimes too much for him: but if they did too little of one kind, time and accident did the rest. Distinct dominions, and different pretentions, created contrary interests in the house of Austria: and on the abdication of CHARLES the fifth, his brother fucceeded, not his fon, to the

empire. The house of Austria divided in-

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. - 293 to a German and a Spanish branch: and if the two branches came to have a mutual influence on one another and frequently a common interest, it was not till one of them had fallen from grandeur, and till the other was rather aiming at it, than in possession of it. In short Philip was excluded from the imperial throne by so natural a progression of causes and effects, arising not only in Germany but in his own family, that if a treaty had been made to exclude him from it in favour of Ferdinand, such a treaty might have been said very probably to have executed itself.

THE precaution I have mentioned, and that was neglected in this case without any detriment to the common cause of Europe, was not neglected in the grand alliance of one thousand seven hundred and one. For in that, one of the ends proposed by the war is, to obtain an effectual fecurity against the contingent union of the crowns of France and Spain. The will of CHARLES the fecond provides against the same contingency: and this great principle of preventing too much dominion and power from falling to the lot of either of the families of Bourbon or Austria, seemed to be agreed on all fides; fince in the par-T 3

294 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. tition-treaty the fame precaution was taken against an union of the Imperial and Spanish crowns. King WILLIAM was enough piqued against France. His ancient prejudices were itrong and well founded. He had been worsted in war, over-reached in negotiation, and perfonally affronted by her. England and Holland were fufficiently alarmed and animated, and a party was not wanting, even in our island, ready to approve any engagements he would have taken against France and Spain, and in favor of the house of Austria; tho we were less concerned, by any national interest, than any other power that took part in the war, either then, or afterwards. But this prince was far from taking a part beyond that which the particular interests of England and Holland, and the general interest of Europe, necessarily required. must have no more a place than affection, in deliberations of this kind. To have engaged to dethrone Philip, out of refentment to Lewis the fourteenth, would have been a resolution worthy of Charles the twelfth, king of Sweden, who facrificed his country, his people, and himself at last, to his revenge. To have engaged to conequer the Spanish monarchy for the house of Austria, or to go, in favor of that fa-

Let.8. and State of EUROPE. mily, one step beyond those that were neceffary to keep this house on a foot of rivalry with the other, would have been, as I have hinted, to act the part of a vassal, not of an ally. The former pawns his state, and ruins his subjects, for the interest of his fuperior lord, perhaps for his lord's humor, or his passion: the latter goes no further than his own interest carries him; nor makes war for those of another, nor even for his own if they are remote and contingent, as if he fought pro aris et focis, for his religion, his liberty, and his property. greeably to these principles of good policy, we entered into the war that began on the death of CHARLES the second: but we soon departed from them, as I shall have occafion to observe in considering the state of things, at this remarkable juncture, in a view of strength.

Let me recall here what I have faid fomewhere else. They who are in the finking scale of the balance of power do not easily, nor soon, come off from the habitual prejudices of superiority over their neighbours, nor from the confidence that such prejudices inspire. From the year one thousand six hundred and sixty seven, to the end of that century, France had been T4 constantly

296 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. constantly in arms, and her arms had been fuccessful. She had sustained a war, without any confederates against the principal powers of Europe confederated against her, and had finished it with advantage on every fide, just before the death of the king of Spain. She continued armed after the peace, by fea and land. She increased her forces, while other nations reduced theirs, and was ready to defend, or to invade her neighbours, whilft, their confederacy being diffolved, they were in no condition to invade her, and in a bad one to defend themfelves. Spain and France had now one common cause. The electors of BAVARIA and Cologne supported it in Germany, the duke of Savoy was an ally, the duke of MANTUA a vaffal of the two crowns in Italy. In a word, appearances were formidable on that fide; and if a distrust of strength, on the fide of the confederacy, had induced England and Holland to compound with France for a partition of the Spanish succession, there seemed to be still greater reason for this distrust after the acceptation of the will, the peaceable and ready submission of the entire monarchy of Spain to Philip, and all the measures taken to fecure him in this possession. Such appearances might well impose. They did

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. fo on many, and on none more than on the French themselves, who engaged with great confidence and spirit in the war; when they found it, as they might well expect it would be, unavoidable. The strength of France however, tho great, was not so great as the French thought it, nor equal to the efforts they undertook to make. Their engagement, to maintain the Spanish monarchy entire under the dominion of PHILIP, exceeded their strength. Our engagement, to procure some out-skirts of it for the house of Austria, was not in the same disproportion to our strength. If I speak positively on this occasion, yet I cannot be accused of presumption; because, how disputable foever these points might be when they were points of political ipeculation, they are fuch no longer, and the judgment I make is dictated to me by experience. France threw herfelf into the finking scale, when she accepted the will. Her scale continued to fink during the whole courfe of the war, and might have been kept by the peace as low as the true interest of Europe required. What I remember to have heard the duke of MARLBOROUGH fay, before he went to take on him the command of the army in the Low Countries in one thousand seven hundred and two, proved

## 298 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

true. The French mifreckoned very much. if they made the same comparison between their troops and those of their enemies, as they had made in precedent wars. Those that had been opposed to them, in the last, were raw for the most part when it began, the British particularly: but they had been disciplined, if I may say so, by their defeats. They were grown to be veteran at the peace of Ryswic, and tho many had been disbanded, yet they had been disbanded lately: fo that even these were easily formed a-new, and the spirit that had been raised continued in all. Supplies of men to recruit the armies were more abundant on the fide of the confederacy, than on that of the two crowns: a necessary consequence of which it feemed to be, that those of the former would grow better, and those of the latter worse, in a-long, extensive, and bloody war. I believe it proved so; and if my memory does not deceive me, the French were forced very early to fend recruits to their armies, as they fend flaves to their gallies. A comparison between those who were to direct their councils, and to conduct the armies on both fides, is a task it would become me little to undertake. The event shewed, that if France had had her Conde, her Turenne, or her Lux-EMBURG.

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. EMBURG, to oppose to the confederates: the confederates might have opposed to her, with equal confidence, their Eugene of Savoy, their MARLBOROUGH, or their STA-RENBERG. But there is one observation I cannot forbear to make. The alliances were concluded, the quotas were fettled, and the feafon for taking the field approached, when king WILLIAM died. The event could not fail to occasion some consternation on one side, and to give some hopes on the other; for, notwithstanding the ill fuccess with which he made war generally, he was looked upon as the fole centre of union that could keep together the great confederacy then forming: and how much the French feared, from his life, had appeared a few years before, in the extravagant and indecent joy they expressed on a false report of his death. A short time shewed how vain the fears of some and the hopes of others were. By his death, the duke of Marlborough was raised to the head of the army, and indeed of the confederacy: where he, a new, a private man, a fubject, acquired by merit and by managementa more deciding influence, than high birth, confirmed authority, and even the crown of Great Britain, had given to king WILLIAM. Not only all the parts

300 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 3. of that vast machine, the grand alliance, were kept more compact and entire; but a more rapid and vigorous motion was given to the whole: and, instead of languishing out disastrous campaigns, we saw every scene of the war full of action. All those wherein he appeared, and many of those wherein he was not then an actor, but abettor however of their action, were crowned with the most triumphant success. I take with pleasure this opportunity of doing justice to that great man, whose faults I knew, whose virtues I admired; and whose memory, as the greatest general and as the greatest minifter that our country or perhaps any other has produced, I honor. But besides this, the observation I have made comes into my fubject, fince it ferves to point out to your lordship the proof of what I said above, that France undertook too much, when the undertook to maintain the Spanish monarchy entire in the possession of Philip: and that we undertook no more than what was proportionable to our ftrength, when we undertook to weaken that monarchy by difmembering it, in the hands of a prince of the house of Bourbon, which we had been disabled by ill fortune and worse conduct to keep out of them. It may be faid that the great success of the confederates against

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. against France proves that their generals were fuperior to her's, but not that their forces and their national strength were fo; that with the same force with which she was beaten, she might have been victorious; that if she had been so, or if the success of the war had varied, or been less decisive against her in Germany, in the Low Countries, and in Italy, as it was in Spain, her ftrength would have appeared fufficient, and that of the confederacy infufficient. Many things may be urged to destroy this reasoning: I content myself with one. France could not long have made even the unsuccessful efforts she did make, if England and Holland had done what it is undeniable they had strength to do; if befides pillaging, I do not fay conquering, the Spanish West-Indies, they had hindered the French from going to the South Sea; as they did annually during the whole course of the war without the least molestation, and from whence they imported into France in that time as much filver and gold as the whole species of that kingdom amounted to. With this immense and constant supply of wealth France was reduced in effect to bankruptcy before the end of the war. How much fooner must the have been fo, if this supply had been kept

302 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. kept from her? The confession of France herself is on my side. She confessed her inability to support what she had undertaken, when she sued for peace as early as the year one thousand seven hundred and fix. She made her utmost efforts to anfwer the expectation of the Spaniards, and to keep their monarchy entire. When experience had made it evident that this was beyond her power, she thought herself juflified to the Spanish nation, in consenting to a partition, and was ready to conclude a peace with the allies on the principles of their grand alliance. But as France feemed to flatter herself, till experience made her desirous to abandon an enterprise that exceeded her strength; you will find, my lord, that her enemies began to flatter themselves in their turn, and to form defigns and take engagements that exceeded theirs. Great Britain was drawn into these engagements little by little; for I do not remember any parliamentary declaration for continuing the war till PHILIP should be dethroned, before the year one thousand seven hundred and six: and then fuch a declaration was judged necessary to fecond the resolution of our ministers and our allies, in departing from the principles of the grand alliance, and in proposing not only

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 303 only the reduction of the French, but the conquest of the Spanish monarchy, as the objects of the war. This new plan had taken place, and we had begun to act upon it, two years before, when the treaty with Portugal was concluded, and the archduke Charles, now emperor, was sent into Portugal first, and into Catalonia afterwards, and was acknowledged and supported as king of Spain.

WHEN your lordship peruses the anecdotes of the times here spoken of, and confiders the course and event of the great war which broke out on the death of the king of Spain, CHARLES the second, and was ended by the treaties of Utrecht and Radstat; you will find, that in order to form a true judgment on the whole you must confider very attentively the great change made by the new plan that I have mentioned; and compare it with the plan of the grand alliance, relatively to the general interest of Europe, and the particular interest of your own country. It will not, because it cannot, be denied, that all the ends of the grand alliance might have been obtained by a peace in one thousand feven hundred and fix. I need not recall the events of that, and of the precedent years

304 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. of the war. Not only the arms of France had been defeated on every fide; but the inward state of that kingdom was already more exhausted than it had ever been. She went on indeed, but she staggered and reeled under the burden of the war. Our condition, I speak of Great Britain, was not quite fo bad; but the charge of the war increased annually upon us. It was evident that this charge must continue to increase, and it was no less evident that our nation was unable to bear it without falling foon into fuch diffress, and contracting fuch debts, as we have feen and felt, and still feel. The Dutch neither restrained their trade, nor over-loaded it with taxes. They foon altered the proportion of their quotas, and were deficient even after this alteration in them. But, however, it must be allowed that they exerted their whole strength; and they and we paid the whole charge of the war. Since therefore by fuch efforts as could not be continued any longer, without oppressing and impoverishing these nations to a degree that no interest except that of their very being, nor any engagement of affilting an alliance totis viribus can require, France was reduced, and all the ends of the war were become attainable; it will be worth your lordship's

lordship's while to consider why the true use was not made of the success of the confederates against France and Spain, and why a peace was not concluded in the fifth year of the war. When your lordship confiders this, you will compare in your thoughts what the flate of Europe would have been, and that of your own country might have been, if the plan of the grand alliance had been purfued: with the poffible as well as certain, the contingent as well as necessary, consequences of changing this plan in the manner it was changed. You will be of opinion, I think, and it feems to me, after more than twenty years of recollection, re-examination, and reflection, that impartial posterity must be of the fame opinion; you will be of opinion, I think, that the war was wife and just before the change, because necessary to maintain that equality among the powers of Europe on which the public peace and common prosperity depends: and that it was unwise and unjust after this change, because unnecessary to this end, and directed to other and to contrary ends. You will be guided by undeniable facts to discover, through all the false colors which have been laid, and which deceived many at the time, that the war, after this change, became a war of

### 306 ASketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

of passion, of ambition, of avarice, and of private interest; the private interest of particular persons and particular states; to which the general interest of Europe was facrificed so entirely; that if the terms infifted on by the confederates had been granted, nay if even those which France was reduced to grant, in one thousand seven hundred and ten, had been accepted, fuch a new fystem of power would have been created as might have exposed the balance of this power to deviations, and the peace of Europe to troubles, not inferior to those that the war was defigned, when it began, to prevent. Whilst you observe this in general, you will find particular occasion to lament the fate of Great Britain, in the midft of triumphs that have been founded fo high. She had triumphed indeed to the year one thousand seven hundred and six inclusively: but what were her triumphs afterwards? What was her fuccess after she proceeded on the new plan? I shall fay something on that head immediately. Here let me only fay, that the glory of taking towns, and winning battles, is to be meafured by the utility that refults from those victories. Victories, that bring honor to the arms, may bring shame to the councils, of a nation. To win a battle, to take

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE.

take a town, is the glory of a general, and of an army. Of this glory we had a very large share in the course of the war. But the glory of a nation is to proportion the ends she proposes, to her interest and her strength; the means she employs to the ends she proposes, and the vigor she exerts to both. Of this glory, I apprehend, we have had very little to boaft, at any time, and particularly in the great conjuncture of which I am speaking. The reafons of ambition, avarice, and private interest, which engaged the princes and states of the confederacy to depart from the principles of the grand alliance, were no reasons for Great Britain. She neither expected nor defired any thing more than what she might have obtained by adhering to those principles. What hurried our nation then, with fo much spirit and ardor, into those of the new plan? Your lordship will anfwer this question to yourself, I believe, by the prejudices and rashness of party; by the influence that the first successes of the confederate arms gave to our ministers; and the popularity they gave, if I may fay io, to the war; by ancient, and fresh refentments, which the unjust and violent ulurpations, in short the whole conduct of Lewis the fourteenth for forty years toge- $U_2$ 

ther,

### 308 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

ther, his haughty treatment of other princes and states, and even the style of his court, had created; and, to mention no more, by a notion, groundless but prevalent, that he was and would be mafter as long as his grandson was king of Spain, and that there could be no effectual measure taken, tho the grand alliance supposed that there might, to prevent a future union of the two monarchies, as long as a prince of the house of Bourbon fat on the Spanish throne. That fuch a notion should have prevailed, in the first confusion of thoughts which the death and will of CHARLES the fecond produced, among the generality of men, who faw the fleets and armies of France take possession of all the parts of the Spanish monarchy, is not to be wondered at by those that consider how ill the generality of mankind are informed, how incapable they are of judging, and yet how ready to pronounce judgment; in fine, how inconsiderately they follow one another in any popular opinion which the heads of party broach, or to which the first appearances of things have given occasion. But, even at this time, the councils of England and Holland did not entertain this notion. They acted on quite another, as might be shewn in many instances, if any other besides that of the grand

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. grand alliance was necessary. When these councils therefore feemed to entertain this notion afterwards, and acted and took engagements to act upon it, we must conclude that they had other motives. They could not have these; for they knew, that as the Spaniards had been driven by the two treaties of partition to give their monarchy to a prince of the house of Bourbon, so they were driven into the arms of France by the war that we made to force a third upon them. If we acted rightly on the principles of the grand alliance, they acted rightly on those of the will: and if we could not avoid making an offensive war, at the expence of forming and maintaining a vast confederacy, they could not avoid purchasing the protection and assistance of France in a defensive war, and especially in the beginning of it, according to what I have fomewhere observed already, by yielding to the authority and admitting the influence of that court in all the affairs of Our ministers knew their government. therefore, that if any inference was to be drawn from the first part of this notion, it was for shortening, not prolonging, the war; for delivering the Spaniards as foon as poifible from habits of union and intimacy with France; not for continuing them under the

U 2

#### 310 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

fame necessity, till by length of time these habits should be confirmed. As to the latter part of this notion, they knew that it was false and filly. Garth the best natured ingenious wild man I ever knew, might be in the right when he said, in some of his poems at that time,

" --- An Austrian prince alone,

"Is fit to nod upon a Spanish throne."

The fetting an Austrian prince upon it was, no doubt, the furest expedient to prevent an union of the two monarchies of France and Spain; just as fetting a prince of the house of Bourbon on that throne was the furest expedient to prevent an union of the Imperial and Spanish crowns. But it was equally false to fay, in either case, that this was the fole expedient. It would be no paradox, but a proposition easily proved, to advance, that if these unions had been effectually provided against, the general interest of Europe would have been little concerned whether PHILIP OF CHARLES had nodded at Madrid. It would be likewife no paradox to fay, that the contingency of uniting France and Spain under the same prince appeared more remote, about the middle of the last great war, when

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 311 when the dethronement of PHILIP in favor of CHARLES was made a condition of peace fine qua non, than the contingency of an union of the Imperial and Spanish crowns. Nay, I know not whether it would be a paradox to affirm, that the expedient that was taken, and that was always obvious to be taken, of excluding Philip and his race from the fuccession of France, by creating an interest in all the other princes of the blood, and by consequence a party in France itself, for their exclusion, whenever the case should happen, was not in its nature more effectual than any that could have been taken: and fome must have been taken, not only to exclude CHARLES from the empire whenever the case should happen that happened foon, the death of his brother Joseph without issue male, but his posterity likewise in all future vacancies of the imperial throne. The expedient that was taken against Philip at the treaty of Utrecht, they who opposed the peace attempted to ridicule; but some of them have had occasion since that time to see, tho the case has not happened, how effectual it would have been if it had: and he who should go about to ridicule it after our experience, would only make himself ridicu-Notwithstanding all this, he, who lous. U4 transports

### 312 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

transports himself back to that time, must acknowledge, that the confederated powers in general could not but be of GARTH's mind, and think it more agreeable to the common interest of Europe, that a branch of Austria, than a branch of Bourbon, should gather the Spanish succession, and that the matitime powers, as they are called impertinently enough with respect to the superiority of Great Britain, might think it was for their particular interest to have a prince. dependant for fome time at least on them, king of Spain, rather than a prince whose dependence, as long as he flood in any, must be naturally on France. I do not say, as some have done, a prince whose family was an old ally, rather than a prince whose family was an old enemy; because I lay no weight on the gratitude of princes, and am as much persuaded that an Austrian king of Spain would have made us returns of that fort in no other proportion than of his want of us, as I am that PHILIP and his race will make no other returns of the fame fort to France. If this affair had been entire, therefore, on the death of the king of Spain; if we had made no partition, nor he any will, the whole monarchy of Spain would have been the prize to be fought for; and our wishes, and such efforts as we were

and State of EUROPE. Let. 8. able to make, in the most unprovided condition imaginable, must have been on the side of Austria. But it was far from being entire. A prince of the house of Austria might have been on the fpot, before the king of SPAIN died, to gather his fuccession; but instead of this a prince of the house of Bourbon was there foon afterwards, and took posfession of the whole monarchy, to which he had been called by the late king's will, and by the voice of the Spanish nation. councils of England and Holland therefore preferred very wifely, by their engagements in the grand alliance, what was more practicable tho less eligible, to what they deemed more eligible, but faw become by the course of events, if not absolutely impracticable, yet an enterprise of more length, more difficulty, and greater expence of blood and treasure, than these nations were able to bear; or than they ought to bear, when their fecurity and that of the rest of Europe might be fufficiently provided for at a cheaper rate. If the confederates could not obtain, by the force of their arms, the ends of the war, laid down in the grand alliance, to what purpose would it be to stipulate for more? And if they were able to obtain thefe, it was evident that, whilft they dif-

membered the Spanish monarchy, they

must reduce the power of France. This happened; the Low Countries were conquered; the French were driven out of Germany and Italy: and Lewis the fourteenth, who had so long and so lately set mankind at desiance, was reduced to sue for peace.

If it had been granted him in one thoufand feven hundred and fix, on what foot must it have been granted? The allies had already in their power all the states that were to compose the reasonable satisfaction for the emperor. I fay, in their power; because the Naples and Sicily were not actually reduced at that time, yet the expulsion of the French out of Italy, and the disposition of the people of those kingdoms, confidered, it was plain the allies might reduce them when they pleased. The confederate arms were superior till then in Spain, and feveral provinces acknowledged CHARLES the third. If the rest had been yielded to him by treaty, all that the new plan required had been obtained. If the French would not yet have abandoned PHILIP. as we had found that the Castilians would not even when our army was at Madrid, all that the old plan, the plan of the grand alliance required, had been obtained? but ftill

ftill France and Spain had given nothing to purchase a peace, and they were in circumstances not to expect it without purchasing it. They would have purchased it, my lord: and France, as well as Spain, would have contributed a larger share of the price, rather than continue the war, in her exhaufted state. Such a treaty of peace would have been a third treaty of partition indeed, but vaftly preferable to the two former. The great objection to the former was drawn from that considerable increase of dominion. which the crown of France, and not a branch of the house of Bourbon, acquired by them. I know what may be faid specioully enough to perfuade, that fuch an increase of dominion would not have augmented, but would rather have weakened the power of France, and what examples may be drawn from history to countenance fuch an opinion. I know likewife, that the compact figure of France, and the contiguity of all her provinces, make a very effential part of the force of her monarchy. Had the defigns of Charles the eighth. Lewis the twelfth, Francis the first, and HENRY the second, succeeded, the dominions of France would have been more extensive. and I believe the strength of her monarchy would have been less. I have sometimes thought

# 316 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

thought that even the loss of the battle of St. Quentin, which obliged HENRY the fecond to recal the duke of Guise with his army out of Italy, was in this respect no unhappy event. But the reasoning which is good, I think, when applied to those times, will not hold when applied to ours, . and to the case I consider here; the state of France, the state of her neighbours, and the whole constitution of Europe being fo extremely different. The objection therefore to the two treaties of partition had a real weight. The power of France, deemed already exorbitant, would have been increased by this accession of dominion, in the hands of Lewis the fourteenth: and the use he intended to make of it by keeping Italy and Spain in awe, appears in the article that gave him the ports on the Tufcan coast, and the province of Guipuscoa. This king WILLIAM might, and, I question not, did fee; but that prince might think too, that for this very reason Lewis the fourteenth would adhere, in all events, to the treaty of partition: and that these confequences were more remote, and would be less dangerous, than those of making no partition at all. The partition, even the worst that might have been made, by a treaty of peace in one thousand seven hundred

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 317

dred and fix, would have been the very reverse of this. France would have been weakened, and her enemies strengthened, by her concessions on the side of the Low Countries, of Germany, and Savoy. prince of her royal family had remained in possession of Spain and the West-Indies, no advantage would have accrued to her by it. and effectual bars would have been opposed to an union of the two monarchies. house of Austria would have had a reasonable fatisfaction for that shadow of right. which a former partition gave her. She had no other after the will of CHARLES the fecond; and this may be justly termed a shadow, fince England, Holland, and France could confer no real right to the Spanish fuccession, nor to any part of it. She had declined acceding to that partition, before France departed from it, and would have preferred the Italian provinces, without Spain and the West-Indies, to Spain and the West-Indies without the Italian provinces. The Italian provinces would have fallen to her share by this partition. particular demands of England and Holland would have fuffered no difficulty, and those that we were obliged by treaty to make for others would have been easy to adjust. Would not this have been enough,

### 318 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

my lord, for the public fecurity, for the common interest, and for the glory of our arms? To have humbled and reduced, in five campaigns, a power that had diffurbed and infulted Europe almost forty years; to have reftored, in fo fhort a time, the balance of power in Europe to a sufficient point of equality, after it had been more than fifty years, that is from the treaty of Westphalia, in a gradual deviation from this point; in short to have retrieved, in one thousand seven hundred and fix, a game that was become desperate at the beginning of the century. To have done all this before the war had exhausted our strength. was the utmost fure that any man could defire who intended the public good alone: and no honest reason ever was, nor ever will be given, why the war was protracted any longer; why we neither made peace after a short, vigorous, and successful war, nor put it entirely out of the power of France to continue at any rate a long one. I have faid, and it is true, that this had been entirely out of her power, if we had given greater interruption to the commerce of Old and New Spain, and if we had hindered France from importing annually, from the year one thousand seven hundred and two, fuch immense treasures as she did import

by the ships she sent, with the permission of Spain, to the South Sea. It has been advanced, and it is a common opinion, that we were restrained by the jealousy of the Dutch from making use of the liberty given by treaty to them and us, and which, without his imperial majesty's leave, since we entered into the war, we might have taken, of making conquests in the Spanish West-Indies. Be it fo. But to go to the South Seas, to trade there if we could, to pillage the West-Indies without making conquests if we could not, and, whether we traded or whether we pillaged, to hinder the French from trading there; was a measure that would have given, one ought to think, no jealoufy to the Dutch, who might, and it is to be supposed would, have taken their part in these expeditions; or if it had given them jealoufy, what could they have replied when a British minister had told them: That it little became them to find fault that we traded with or pillaged the Spaniards

in the West-Indies to the detriment of

· our common enemy, whilft we connived at them who traded with this enemy to

his and their great advantage, against our

remonstrances, and in violation of the

condition upon which we had given the

first augmentation of our forces in the

· Low

### 320 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

Low Countries?' We might have purfued this measure notwithstanding any engagement that we took by the treaty with Portugal, if I remember that treaty right: but instead of this, we wasted our forces, and fquandered millions after millions in fupporting our alliance with this crown, and in purfuing the chimerical project which was made the object of this alliance. I call it chimerical, because it was equally so, to expect a revolution in favor of CHARLES the third on the slender authority of such a trifler as the admiral of Castile; and, when this failed us, to hope to conquer Spain by the affistance of the Portuguese, and the revolt of the Catalans. Yet this was the foundation upon which the new plan of the war was built, and fo many ruinous engagements were taken.

THE particular motives of private men, as well as of princes and states, to protract the war, are partly known, and partly guessed, at this time. But whenever that time comes, and I am persuaded it will come, when their secret motives, their secret designs, and intrigues, can be laid open, I presume to say to your lordship that the most confused scene of iniquity, and folly, that it is possible to imagine, will

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. will appear. In the mean while, if your lordship considers only the treaty of barrier, as my lord Townshend figned it, without, nay in truth, against orders; for the duke of Marlborough, tho joint plenipotentiary, did not: if you consider the famous preliminaries of one thousand seven hundred and nine, which we made a mockthew of ratifying, tho we knew that they would not be accepted; for so the marquis of Torcy had told the pensionary before he left the Hague, as the faid marquis has affured me very often fince that time: if you enquire into the anecdotes of Gertruydenberg, and if you confult other authentic papers that are extant, your lordship will see the policy of the new plan, I think, in this light. Tho we had refused, before the war began, to enter into engagements for the conquest of Spain, yet as soon as it began, when the reason of things was still the same, for the success of our first campaign cannot be faid to have altered it, we entered into these very engagements. By the treaty wherein we took these engagements first, Portugal was brought into the grand alliance; that is, she consented to employ her formidable forces against PHILIP, at the expence of England and Holland, provided we would debar ourselves from making

#### 322 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

making any acquisitions, and the house of Austria promise, that she should acquire many important places in Spain, and an immense extent of country in America. By fuch bargains as this, the whole confederacy was formed, and held together. Such means were indeed effectual to multiply enemies to France and Spain; but a project fo extensive and so difficult as to make many bargains of this kind necessary, and necessary for a great number of years, and for a very uncertain event, was a project into which, for this very reason, England and Holland should not have entered. It is worthy your observation, my lord, that these bad bargains would not have been continued, as they were almost to our immediate ruin, if the war had not been protracted under the pretended necessity of reducing the whole Spanish monarchy to the obedience of the house of Austria. Now, as no other confederate except Portugal was to receive his recompence by any difmemberment of dominions in Old or New Spain, the engagements we took to conquer this whole monarchy had no visible necessary cause, but the procuring the accession of this power, that was already neuter, to the grand alliance. This accession, as I have faid before, ferved only to make us neglect imLet. 8. and State of EUROPE. 323 immediate and certain advantages, for remote and uncertain hopes; and chuse to attempt the conquest of the Spanish nation at our own vast expence, whom we might have starved, and by starving reduced both the French and them, at their expence.

I called the necessity of reducing the whole Spanish monarchy to the obedience of the house of Austria, a pretended necessity: and pretended it was, not real, without doubt. But I am apt to think your lordship may go further, and find fome reasons to suspect, that the opinion itself of this necessity was not very real, in the minds of those who urged it: in the minds I would fay of the able men among them; for that it was real in some of our zealous British politicians, I do them the justice to believe. Your lordship may find reasons to suspect perhaps, that this opinion was fet up rather to occasion a diversion of the forces of France, and to furnish pretences for prolonging the war for other ends.

BEFORE the year one thousand seven hundred and ten, the war was kept alive with alternate success in Spain; and it may X 2

### 324 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

be faid therefore, that the defign of conquering this kingdom continued, as well as the hopes of succeeding. But why then did the States General refuse, in one thoufand feven hundred and nine, to admit an article in the barrier-treaty, by which they would have obliged themselves to procure the whole Spanish monarchy to the house of Austria, when that zealous politician my lord Townshend pressed them to it? If their opinion of the necessity of carrying on the war, till this point could be obtained, was real; why did they rifque the immense advantages given them with so much profuse generofity by this treaty, rather than confent to an engagement that was fo conformable to their opinion?

AFTER the year one thousand seven hundred and ten, it will not be said, I presume, that the war could be supported in Spain with any prospect of advantage on our side. We had sufficiently experienced how little dependence could be had on the vigor of the Portuguese; and how sirmly the Spanish nation in general, the Castilians in particular, were attached to Philip. Our armies had been twice at Madrid, this prince had been twice driven from the capital, his rival had been there, none stirred in savor of

# Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 325

the victorious, all wished and acted for the vanguished. In short the falshood of all those lures, by which we had been enticed to make war in Spain, had appeared fufficiently in one thousand seven hundred and fix; but was fo grosly evident in one thoufand seven hundred and ten, that Mr. CRAGGS, who was fent towards the end of that year by Mr. STANHOPE into England, on commissions which he executed with much good fense and much address, owned to me, that, in Mr. STAN-HOPE's opinion, and he was not apt to defoond of fuccess, especially in the execution of his own projects, nothing could be done more in Spain, the general attachment of the people to Philip, and their aversion to Charles considered: that armies of twenty or thirty thousand men might walk about that country till dooms-day, fo he expressed himself, without effect: that wherever they came, the people would fubmit to CHARLES the third out of terror, and, as foon as they were gone, proclaim PHILIP the fifth again out of affection: that to conquer Spain required a great army; and to keep it, a greater.

Was it possible, after this, to think in good earnest of conquering Spain, and X 3 could

### 326 ASketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

could they be in good earnest who continued to hold the fame language, and to infift on the fame measures? Could they be fo in the following year, when the emperor Joseph died? Charles was become then the fole furviving male of the house of Austria, and succeeded to the empire as well as to all the hereditary dominions of that family. Could they be in earnest who maintained, even in this conjuncture, that " no peace could be fafe, honorable, or " lasting, so long as the kingdom of Spain " and the West-Indies remained in the " possession of any branch of the house of " Bourbon?" Did they mean that CHARLES fhould be emperor and king of Spain? In this project they would have had the allies against them. Did they mean to call the duke of Savoy to the crown of Spain, or to bestow it on some other prince? In this project they would have had his Imperial majesty against them. In either case the confederacy would have been broken: and how then would they have continued the war? Did they mean nothing, or did they mean fomething more than they owned; fomething more than to reduce the exorbitant power of France, and to force the whole Spanish monarchy out of the house of Bourbon?

Вотн

BOTH these ends might have been obtained at Gertruydenberg. Why were they not obtained? Read the preliminaries of one thousand seven hundred and nine, which were made the foundation of this treaty. Inform yourself of what passed there, and observe what followed. Your lordship will remain astonished. I remain so every time I reflect upon them, tho I faw these things ar no very great distance, even whilst they were in transaction; and tho I know most certainly that France loft, two years before, by the little skill and address of her principal\* minister, in answering overtures made during the fiege of Lisle by a principal person among the allies, such an opportunity, and fuch a correspondence, as would have removed fome of the obstacles that lay now in her way, have prevented others, and have procured her peace. An equivalent for the thirty-seventh article of the preliminaries, that is, for the cession of Spain and the West-Indies, was the point to be discussed at Gertruydenberg. Naples and Sicily, or even Naples and Sardinia would have contented the French, at least they would have accepted them as the equivalent. Buys and VANDERDUSSEN,

<sup>\*</sup> CHAMILLARD

#### 328 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

treated with them, reported this to the ministers of the allies: and it was upon this occasion that the duke of Marlborough, as Buys himself told me, took immediately the lead, and congratulated the assembly on the near approach of a peace; said, that since the French were in this disposition, it was time to consider what further demands should be made upon them, according to the liberty observed in the preliminaries; and exhorted all the ministers of the allies to adjust their several ulterior pretensions, and to prepare their demands.

This proceeding, and what followed, put me in mind of that of the Romans with the Carthaginians. The former were refolved to confent to no peace till Carthage was laid in ruins. They fet a treaty however on foot, at the request of their old enemy, imposed some terms, and referred them to their generals for the rest. Their generals pursued the same method, and, by reserving still a right of making ulterior demands, they reduced the Carthaginians at last to the necessity of abandoning their city, or of continuing the war after they had given up their arms, their machines, and their sleet, in hopes of peace.

FRANCE

France faw the fnare, and resolved to run any risque rather than to be caught in We continued to demand, under pretence of fecuring the cession of Spain and the West-Indies, that Lewis the fourteenth should take on him to dethrone his grandson in the space of two months; and, if he did not effect it in that time, that we should be at liberty to renew the war without restoring the places that were to be put into our hands according to the preliminaries; which were the most important places France possessed on the side of the Low Countries. Lewis offered to abandon his grandson; and, if he could not prevail on him to refign, to furnish money to the allies, who might at the expence of France force him to evacuate Spain. The propofition made by the allies had an air of inhumanity: and the rest of mankind might be shocked to see the grandfather obliged to make war on his grandson. But Lewis the fourteenth had treated mankind with too much inhumanity in his prosperous days, to have any reason to complain even of this proposition. His people indeed, who are apt to have great partiality for their kings, might pity his diffrefs. happened, and he found his account in it. PHILIP

### 330 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

PHILIP must have evacuated Spain, I think, notwithstanding his own obstinacy, the spirit of his queen, and the resolute attachment of the Spaniards, if his grandfather had infifted, and been in earnest to force him. But if this expedient was, as it was, odious, why did we prefer to continue the war against France and Spain, rather than accept the other? Why did we neglect the opportunity of reducing, effectually and immediately, the exorbitant power of France, and of rendering the conquest of Spain practicable? both which might have been brought about, and confequently the avowed ends of the war might have been answered, by accepting the expedient that France offered. "France" it was faid, " was not fincere: the meant nothing more " than to amuse, and divide." This reason was given at the time; but some of thosewho gave it then, I have seen ashamed to insist on it fince. France was not in a condition to act the part she had acted in former treaties: and her diffress was no bad pledge of her fincerity on this occasion. But there was a better still. The strong places that she must have put into the hands of the allies, would have exposed her, on the least breach of faith, to see, not her frontier alone, but even the provinces that lie behind it, defolated:

### Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 331

lated: and prince EUGENE might have had the fatisfaction, it is faid, I know not how truly, he defired, of marching with the torch in his hand to Verfailles.

Your lordship will observe, that the conferences at Gertruydenberg ending in the manner they did, the inflexibility of the allies gave new life and spirit to the French and Spanish nations, distressed and exhausted as they were. The troops of the former withdrawn out of Spain, and the Spaniards left to defend themselves as they could, the Spaniards alone obliged us to retreat from Madrid, and defeated us in our retreat. But your lordship may think perhaps, as I do, that if Lewis the fourteenth had bound himself by a solemn treaty to abandon his grandson, had paid a fubfidy to dethrone him, and had confented to acknowledge another king of Spain, the Spaniards would not have exerted the same zeal for Philip; the actions of Almenara and Saragoffa might have been decifive, and those of Brihuega and Villa Viciosa would not have happened. After all these events, how could any reasonable man expect that a war should be supported with advantage in Spain, to which the court of Vienna had contributed nothing from the first.

# 332 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

first, scarce bread to their archduke; which Portugal waged faintly and with deficient quotas; and which the Dutch had in a manner renounced, by neglecting to recruit their forces? How was CHARLES to be placed on the Spanish throne, or Philip at least to be driven out of it? by the success of the confederate arms in other parts. But what success sufficient to this purpose, could we expect? This question may be answered best, by shewing what success we had.

PORTUGAL and Savoy did nothing before the death of the emperor Joseph; and declared in form, as foon as he was dead, that they would carry on the war no longer to fet the crown of Spain on the head of CHARLES, fince this would be to fight against the very principle they had fought for. The Rhine was a scene of inaction. The fole efforts, that were to bring about the great event of dethroning Philip, were those which the duke of MARLBOROUGH was able to make. He took three towns in one thousand seven hundred and ten. Aire, Bethune, and St. Venant: and one, Bouchain, in one thousand seven hundred and eleven. Now this conquest being in fact the only one the confederates made that

# Let. 8. and State of EUROPE.

that year, Bouchain may be faid properly and truly to have cost our nation very near feven millions sterling; for your lordship will find, I believe, that the charge of the war for that year amounted to no less. It is true that the duke of MARLBOROUGH had proposed a very great project, by which incursions would have been made during the winter into France; the next campaign might have been opened early on our fide; and feveral other great and obvious advantages might have been obtained; but the Dutch refused to contribute, even less than their proportion, for the queen had offered to take the deficiency on herfelf, to the expence of barracks and forage; and difappointed by their obstinacy the whole defign.

We were then amused with visionary schemes of marching our whole army, in a year or two more, and after a town or two more were taken, directly to Paris, or at least into the heart of France. But was this so easy or so sure a game? The French expected we would play it. Their generals had visited the several posts they might take, when our army should enter France, to retard, to incommode, to distress us in our march, and even to make a decisive stand

334 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let.8. stand and to give us battle. I take what I fay here from indisputable authority, that of the perfons confulted and employed in preparing for this great diffress. Had we been beaten, or had we been forced to retire towards our own frontier in the Low Countries, after penetrating into France, the hopes on which we protracted the war would have been disappointed, and, I think, the most fanguine would have then repented refusing the offers made at Gertruydenberg. But if we had beaten the French, for it was fcarce lawful in those days of our presumption to suppose the contrary; would the whole monarchy of Spain have been our immediate and certain prize? Suppose, and I suppose it on good grounds, my lord, that the French had resolved to defend their country inch by inch, and that Lewis the fourteenth had determined to retire with his court to Lions or elsewhere, and to defend the passage of the Loire, when he could no longer defend that of the Seine, rather than submit to the terms imposed on him: what should we have done in this case? Must we not have accepted such a peace as we had refused; or have protracted the war till we had conquered France first, in order to conquer Spain afterwards? Did we hope for revolutions in France? We had

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 335 had hoped for them in Spain: and we should have been pubbles of our hopes in

should have been bubbles of our hopes in both. That there was a spirit raised against the government of Lewis the sourteenth, in his court, nay in his family, and that strange schemes of private ambition were formed and forming there, I cannot doubt: and some effects of this spirit produced perhaps the greatest mortifications that he suffered in the latter part of his reign.

A LIGHT instance of this spirit is all I will quote at this time. I supped, in the year one thousand seven hundred and fifteen, at a house in France, where two\* persons of no small figure, who had been in great company that night, arrived very late. The conversation turned on the events of the precedent war, and the negotiations of the late peace, in the process of the conversation, one of them+ broke loose, and faid, directing his discourse to me, " Vous " auriez pu nous écraser dans ce tems là: " pourquoi ne l'avez-vous pas fait?" I answered him cooly, " Par ce que dans ce " tems-là nous n'avons plus craint vôtre " puissance." This anecdote, too trivial for history, may find its place in a letter, and

<sup>\*</sup> The duke de La Feuillade and Mortemar.
† La Feuillade.

# 336 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let.8.

may ferve to confirm what I have admitted, that there were perfons even in France, who expected to find their private account in the distress of their country. But these persons were a few, men of wild imaginations and strong passions, more enterprising than capable, and of more name than credit. In general the endeavours of Lewis the sourteenth, and the sacrifices he offered to make in order to obtain a peace, had attached his people more than ever to him: and if Lewis had determined not to go farther than he had offered at Gertruydenberg, in abandoning his grandson, the French nation would not have abandoned him.

But to refume what I have faid or hinted already; the necessary consequences of protracting the war in order to dethrone Philip, from the year one thousand seven hundred and eleven inclusively, could be no other than these: our design of penetrating into France might have been deseated, and have become fatal to us by a reverse of fortune: our first success might not have obliged the French to submit; and we might have had France to conquer, after we had failed in our first attempt to conquer Spain, and even in order to proceed to a second: the French might have submitted, and the Spaniards

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. Spaniards not; and whilst the former had been employed to force the latter, according to the scheme of the allies; or whilst, the latter submitting likewise, Philip had evacuated Spain, the high allies might have gone together by the ears about dividing the spoil, and disposing of the crown of Spain. To these issues were things brought by protracting the war; by refusing to make peace, on the principles of the grand alliance at worst, in one thousand seven hundred and fix; and by refusing to grant it, even on those of the new plan, in one thousand seven hundred and ten. contingent events as I have mentioned flood in prospect before us. The end of the war was removed out of fight; and they, who clamoured rather than argued for the continuation of it, contented themselves to affirm, that France was not enough reduced, and that no peace ought to be made as long as a prince of the house of Bourbon remained on the Spanish throne. they would think France enough reduced, it was impossible to guess. Whether they intended to join the Imperial and Spanish crowns on the head of CHARLES, who had declared his irrevocable resolution to continue the war till the conditions infifted upon at Gertruydenberg were obtained: whether

238 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. whether they intended to bestow Spain and the Indies on some other prince: and how this great alteration in their own plan should be effected by common consent: how possession should be given to CHARLES, or to any other prince, not only of Spain but of all the Spanish dominions out of Europe, where the attachment to Philip was at least as strong as in Castile, and where it would not be fo eafy, the diffance and extent of these dominions considered. to oblige the Spaniards to submit to another government: These points, and many more equally necessary to be determined, and equally difficult to prepare, were neither determined nor prepared; fo that we were reduced to carry on the war, after the death of the emperor Joseph, without any positive scheme agreed to, as the scheme of the future peace, by the allies. That of the grand alliance we had long before renounced. That of the new plan was become ineligible; and, if it had been eligible, it would have been impracticable, because of the division it would have created among the allies themselves: several of whom would not have confented, notwithstanding his irrevocable resolution, that the emperor should be king of Spain. I know not what part the protractors of the war,

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. in the depth of their policy, intended to take. Our nation had contributed, and acted fo long under the direction of their councils, for the grandeur of the house of Austria, like one of the hereditary kingdoms usurped by that family, that it is lawful to think their intention might be to unite the Imperial and Spanish crowns. But I rather think they had no very determinate view, beyond that of continuing the war as long as they could. The late lord Oxford told me, that my lord So-MERS being pressed, I know not on what occasion nor by whom, on the unnecessary and ruinous continuation of the war; instead of giving reasons to shew the necesfity of it, contented himself to reply, that he had been bred up in a hatred of France. This was a strange reply for a wife man: and yet I know not whether he could have given a better then, or whether any of his pupils could give a better now.

The whig party in general acquired great and just popularity, in the reign of our Charles the second, by the clamor they raised against the conduct of that prince in foreign affairs. They who succeeded to the name rather than the principles of this party, after the revolution, and who have

340 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. had the administration of the government in their hands with very little interruption every fince, pretending to act on the fame principle, have run into an extreme as vicious and as contrary to all the rules of good policy, as that which their predecesfors exclaimed against. The old whigs complained of the inglorious figure we made, whilft our court was the bubble, and our king the pensioner of France; and infifted that the growing ambition and power of Lewis the fourteenth should be opposed in time. The modern whigs boafted, and still boaft, of the glorious figure we made, whilft we reduced ourselves, by their councils, and under their administrations, to be the bubbles of our penfioners, that is of our allies; and whilft we measured our efforts in war, and the continuation of them, without any regard to the interests and abilities of our own country, without a just and sober regard, fuch an one as contemplates objects in their true light and fees them in their true magnitude, to the general fystem of power in Europe; and, in short, with a principal regard merely to particular interests at home and abroad. I fay at home and abroad; because it is not less true, that they have facrificed the wealth of their coun-

and State of EUROPE. try to the forming and maintaining a party at home, than that they have done fo to the forming and maintaining, beyond all pretences of necessity, alliances abroad. These general affertions may be easily justified without having recourse to private anecdotes, as your lordship will find when you consider the whole series of our conduct in the two wars; in that which preceded, and that which fucceeded immediately the beginning of the present century, but above all the last of them. In the administrations that preceded the revolution, trade had flourished, and our nation had grown opulent: but the general interest of Europe had been too much neglected by us; and flavery, under the umbrage of prerogative, had been well-nigh established among us. In those that have followed, taxes upon taxes, and debts upon debts, have been perpetually accumulated, till a fmall number of families have grown into immense wealth, and national beggary has been brought upon us; under the specious pretences of supporting a common cause against France, reducing her exorbitant power, and poifing that of Europe more equally in the public balance: laudable designs no doubt, as far as they were real, but fuch as, being converted into Y 3 mere

342 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. mere pretences, have been productive of much evil; fome of which we feel and have long felt, and some will extend it's confequences to our latest posterity. The reign of prerogative was fhort: and the evils and the dangers, to which we were exposed by it, ended with it. But the reign of false and squandering policy has lasted long, it lasts still, and will finally complete our ruin. Beggary has been the confequence of flavery in some countries: flavery will be probably the consequence of beggary in ours; and if it is fo, we know at whose door to lay it. If we had finished the war in one thousand seven hundred and fix, we should have reconciled, like a wife people, our foreign and our domestic interests as nearly as possible: we should have fecured the former fufficiently, and not have facrificed the latter as entirely as we did by the profecution of the war afterwards. You will not be able to fee without aftonishment, how the charge of the war encreased yearly upon us from the beginning of it; nor how immense a sum we paid in the course of it to supply the deficiences of our confederates. Your astonishment, and indignation too, will increase, when you come to compare the progress that

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. was made from the year one thousand seven hundred and fix exclusively, with the expence of more than thirty millions, I do not exaggerate tho' I write upon memory, that this progress cost us, to the year one thousand feven hundred and eleven inclusively. Upon this view, your lordship will be perfuaded that it was high time to take the refolution of making peace, when the queen thought fit to change her ministry, towards the end of the year one thousand seven hundred and ten. It was high time indeed to fave our country from absolute insolvency and bankruptcy, by putting an end to a scheme of conduct, which the prejudices of a party, the whimfy of some particular men, the private interest of more, and the ambition and avarice of our allies, who had been invited as it were to a scramble by the preliminaries of one thousand seven hundred and nine, alone maintained. The persons therefore, who came into power at this time, hearkened, and they did well to hearken, to the first overtures that were made them. The disposition of their enemies invited them to do fo, but that of their friends, and that of a party at home who had nurfed, and been nurfed by the war, might have deterred them from it; for the difficulties and dangers, to which Y 4

344 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. they must be exposed in carrying forward this great work, could escape none of them. In a letter to a friend it may be allowed me to fay, that they did not escape me: and that I forefaw, as contingent but not improbable events, a good part of what has happened to me fince. Tho it was a duty therefore that we owed to our country, to deliver her from the necessity of bearing any longer fo unequal a part in fo unnecesfary a war, yet was there some degree of merit in performing it. I think fo ftrongly in this manner, I am fo incorrigible, my lord, that if I could be placed in the fame circumstances again, I would take the fame refolution, and act the fame part. Age and experience might enable me to act with more ability, and greater skill; but all I have fuffered fince the death of the queen should not hinder me from acting. Notwithstanding this, I shall not be furprifed if you think that the peace of Utrecht was not answerable to the success of the war, nor to the efforts made in it. I think fo myself, and have always owned, even when it was making and made, that I thought fo. Since we had committed a fuccessful folly, we ought to have reaped more advantage from it than we did: and, whether we had left PHILIP, or placed another prince

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 345 prince on the throne of Spain, we ought to have reduced the power of France, and to have strengthened her neighbours, much more than we did. We ought to have reduced her power for generations to come. and not to have contented ourselves with a momentary reduction of it. France was exhausted to a great degree of men and money, and her government had no credit: but they, who took this for a fufficient reduction of her power, looked but a little way before them, and reasoned too fuperficially. Several fuch there were however; for as it has been faid, that there is no extravagancy which fome philosopher or other has not maintained, fo your experience, young as you are, must have shewn you, that there is no abfurd extreme, into which our party-politicians of Great Britain are not prone to fall, concerning the state and conduct of public affairs. But if France was exhausted; so were we, and so were the Dutch. Famine rendered her condition much more miserable than ours, at one time, in appearance and in reality too. But as foon as this accident, that had diftreffed the French and frightened Lewis the fourteenth to the utmost degree, and the immediate consequences of it were over; it was obvious to observe, tho few made

346 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. the observation, that whilst we were unable to raife in a year, by some millions at least, the expences of the year, the French were willing and able to bear the imposition of the tenth over and above all the other taxes that had been laid upon them. This observation had the weight it deferved; and fure it deserved to have some among those who made it, at the time spoken of, and who did not think that the war was to be continued as long as a parliament could be prevailed on to vote money. But fupposing it to have deserved none, supposing the power of France to have been reduced as low as you please, with respect to her inward flate; yet still I affirm, that such a reduction could not be permanent, and was not therefore fufficient. Whoever knows the nature of her government, the temper of her people, and the natural advantages the has in commerce over all the nations that furround her, knows that an arbitrary government, and the temper of her people enable her on particular occafions to throw off a load of debt much more eafily, and with confequences much less to be feared, than any of her neighbours can: that altho, in the general course of things, trade be cramped and industry vexed by this arbitrary government, yet neither

Let.8. and State of EUROPE. neither one nor the other is oppressed; and the temper of the people, and the natural advantages of the country, are fuch, that how great foever her diffress be at any point of time, twenty years of tranquility fuffice to re-establish her affairs, and to enrich her again at the expence of all the nations of Europe. If any one doubts of this, let him consider the condition in which this kingdom was left by Lewis the fourteenth; the strange pranks the late duke of Or-LEANS played, during his regency and administration, with the whole system of public revenue, and private property; and then let him tell himself, that the revenues of France, the tenth taken off, exceed all the expences of her government by many millions of livres already, and will exceed them by many more in another year.

Upon the whole matter, my lord, the low and exhausted state to which France was reduced, by the last great war, was but a momentary reduction of her power: and whatever real and more lasting reduction the treaty of Utrecht brought about in some instances, it was not sufficient. The power of France would not have appeared as great as it did, when England and Holland armed themselves and armed

348 A Sketch of the History Let.8. all Germany against her, if she had lain as open to the invalions of her enemies, as her enemies lay to her's. Her inward strength was great; but the strength of those frontiers which Lewis the fourteenth was almost forty years in forming, and which the folly of all his neighbours in their turns suffered him to form, made this strength as formidable as it became. The true reduction of the exorbitant power of France, I take no notice of chimerical projects about changing her government, confifted therefore in difarming her frontiers, and fortifying the barriers against her, by the cession and demolition of many more places than she yielded up at Utrecht; but not of more than she might have been obliged to facrifice to her own immediate relief, and to the future fecurity of her neighbours. That she was not obliged to make these facrifices, I affirm, was owing folely to those who opposed the peace: and I am willing to put my whole credit with your lordship, and the whole merits of a cause that has been so much contested, on this iffue. I fay a cause that has been so much contested; for in truth, I think, it is no longer a doubt any where, except in British pamphlets, whether the conduct of those who neither declined treating, as was done

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. done in one thousand seven hundred and fix; nor pretended to treat without a defign of concluding, as was done in one thousand feven hundred and nine and ten, but carried the great work of the peace forward to its confummation; or the conduct of those who opposed this work in every step of its progress, saved the power of France from a greater and a fufficient reduction at the treaty of Utrecht. The very ministers, who were employed in this fatal opposition, are obliged to confess this truth. How should they deny it? Those of Vienna may complain that the emperor had not the entire Spanish monarchy, or those of Holland that the States were not made masters directly and indirectly of the whole Low Countries. But neither they, nor any one else that has any sense of shame about him. can deny that the late queen, tho she was refolved to retreat because she was resolved to finish the war, yet was to the utmost degree defirous to treat in a perfect union with her allies, and to procure them all the reasonable terms they could expect; and much better than those they reduced themselves to the necessity of accepting, by endeavouring to wrest the negotiation out of her hands. The difunion of the allies gave France the advantages she improved. The

350 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. fole question is, Who caused this disunion? and that will be easily decided by every impartial man, who informs himself carefully of the public anecdotes of that time. If the private anecdotes were to be laid open as well as those, and I think it almost time they should, the whole monstrous scene would appear, and shock the eye of every honest man. I do not intend to descend into many particulars at this time: but whenever I, or any other person as well informed as I, shall descend into a full deduction of fuch particulars, it will become undeniably evident, that the most violent opposition imaginable, carried on by the Germans and the Dutch in league with a party in Britain, began as foon as the first overtures were made to the queen; before she had so much as begun to treat: and was therefore an opposition not to this or that plan of treaty, but in truth to all treaty; and especially to one wherein Great Britain took the lead, or was to have any particular advantage. That the Imperialifts meant no treaty, unless a preliminary and impracticable condition of it was to fet the crown of Spain on the emperor's head, will appear from this; that prince Eugene, when he came into England, long after the death of Joseph and elevation of CHARLES,

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. CHARLES, upon an errand most unworthy of fo great a man, treated always on this supposition: and I remember with how much inward impatience I affifted at conferences held with him concerning quotas for renewing the war in Spain, in the very fame room, at the cockpit, where the queen's ministers had been told in plain terms, a little before, by those of other allies, "that their masters would not con-" fent that the Imperial and Spanish crowns " should unite on the same head." the Dutch were not averse to all treaty. but meant none wherein Great Britain was to have any particular advantage, will appear from this; that their minister declared himself ready and authorised to stop the opposition made to the queen's measures, by prefenting a memorial, wherein he would declare, "that his masters entered " into them, and were refolved not to con-"tinue the war for the recovery of Spain, " provided the queen would confent that "they should garrison Gibraltar and Port-" mahon jointly with us, and share equal-" ly the Affiento, the South Sea ship, and " whatever should be granted by the Spa-" niards to the queen and her subjects." That the whigs engaged in this league with foreign powers against their country, as

352 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. well as their queen, and with a phrenfy more unaccountable than that which made and maintained the folemn league and covenant formerly, will appear from this; that their attempts were directed not only to wrest the negotiations out of the queen's hands, but to oblige their country to carry on the war, on the same unequal foot that had cost her already about twenty millions more than she ought to have contributed to it. For they not only continued to abet the emperor, whose inability to supply his quota was confessed; but the Dutch likewife, after the States, had refused to ratify the treaty their minister signed at London towards the end of the year one thousand feven hundred and eleven, and by which the queen united herfelf more closely than ever to them; engaging to purfue the war, to conclude the peace, and to guaranty it, when concluded, jointly with them; " pro-"vided they would keep the engagements "they had taken with her, and the condi-"tions of proportionate expence under which our nation had entered into the "war." Upon such schemes as these was the opposition to the treaty of Utrecht carried on: and the means employed, and the means projected to be employed, were worthy of fuch schemes; open, direct, and indecent

and State of EUROPE. Let. 8. indecent defiance of legal authority, fecret conspiracies against the state, and base machinations against particular men, who had no other crime than that of endeavouring to conclude a war, under the authority of the queen, which a party in the nation endeavoured to prolong, against her authority. Had the good policy of concluding the war been doubtful, it was certainly as lawful for those, who thought it good, to advise it, as it had been for those, who thought it bad, to advise the contrary: and the decision of the sovereign on the throne ought to have terminated the contest. But he who had judged by the appearances of things on one fide, at that time, would have been apt to think, that putting an end to the war, or to Magna Charta, was the fame thing; that the queen on the throne had no right to govern independently of her fucceffor; nor any of her subjects a right to administer the government under her, tho called to it by her, except those whom she had thought fit to lay aside. Extravagant as these principles are, no other could justify the conduct held at that time by those who opposed the peace: and as I said just now, that the phrenty of this league was more unaccountable than that of the folemn league and covenant, I might have

Z

added.

#### 354 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

added, that it was not very many degrees less criminal. Some of those, who charged the queen's ministers, after her death, with imaginary treasons, had been guilty during her life of real treasons: and I can compare the folly and violence of the spirit that prevailed at that time, both before the conclusion of the peace, and, underpretence of danger to the succession, after it, to nothing more nearly than to the folly and violence of the spirit that seized the tories foon after the accession of George the first. The latter indeed, which was provoked by unjust and impolitic perfecution, broke out in open rebellion. The former might have done fo, if the queen had lived a little longer. But to return.

The obstinate adherence of the Dutch to this league, in opposition to the queen, rendered the conferences of Utrecht, when they were opened, no better than mock conferences. Had the men who governed that commonwealth been wise and honest enough to unite, at least then, cordially with the queen, and, since they could not hinder a congress, to act in concert with her in it; we should have been still in time to maintain a sufficient union among the allies,

allies, and a fufficient superiority over the French. All the specific demands that the former made, as well as the Dutch themfelves, either to incumber the negotiation, or to have in referve, according to the artifice usually employed on such occasions, certain points from which to depart in the course of it with advantage, would not have been obtained: but all the effential demands, all in particular that were really necessary to secure the barriers in the Low Countries and of the four circles against France, would have been fo. For France must have continued, in this case, rather to fue for peace, than to treat on an equal foot. The first dauphin, son of Lewis the fourteenth, died several months before this congress began: the second dauphin. his grandfon, and the wife and the eldeft fon of this prince, died foon after it began, of the same unknown distemper, and were buried together in the fame grave. Such family misfortunes, following a long feries of national misfortunes, made the old king, tho he bore them with much feeming magnanimity, defirous to get out of the war at any tolerable rate, that he might not run the risque of leaving a child of five years old, the present king, engaged in it. The queen did all that was morally Z 2 possible.

### 356 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8.

possible, except giving up her honor in the negotiation, and the interests of her subjects in the conditions of peace, to procure this union with the states general. But all fhe could do was vain; and the fame phrenfy, that had hindered the Dutch from improving to their and to the common advantage the public misfortunes of France, hindered them from improving to the fame purposes the private misfortunes of the house of Bourbon. They continued to flatter themselves that they should force the queen out of her measures, by their intrigues with the party in Britain who opposed these measures, and even raise an infurrection against her. But these intrigues, and those of prince Eugene, were known and disappointed; and monsieur Buys had the mortification to be reproached with them publicly, when he came to take leave of the lords of the council, by the earl of Oxford; who entered into many particulars that could not be denied, of, the private transactions of this fort, to which Buys had been a party, in compliance with his instructions, and, as I believe, much against his own fense and inclinations. As the feafon for taking the field advanced, the league proposed to defeat the fuccess of the congress by the

events of the campaign. But instead of defeating the fuccess of the congress, the events of the campaign ferved only to turn this fuccess in favor of France. At the beginning of the year, the queen and the States, in concert, might have given the law to friend and foe, with great advantage to the former; and with fuch a detriment to the latter, as the causes of the war rendered just, the events of it reasonable, and the objects of it necessary. At the end of the year, the allies were no longer in a state of giving, nor the French of receiving the law; and the Dutch had recourse to the queen's good offices, when they could oppose and durst infult her no longer. Even then, these offices were employed with zeal, and with some effect for them.

Thus the war ended, much more favorably to France than she expected, or they who put an end to it designed. The queen would have humbled and weakened this power. The allies who opposed her would have crushed it, and have raised another as exorbitant on the ruins of it. Neither one nor the other succeeded, and they who meant to ruin the French power Z 3 preserved

358 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. preferved it, by opposing those who meant to reduce it.

Since I have mentioned the events of the year one thousand seven hundred and twelve, and the decifive turn they gave to the negociations in favor of France, give me leave to fay fomething more on this fubject. You will find that I shall do so with much impartiality. The difaftrous events of this campaign in the Low Countries, and the confequences of them, have been imputed to the separation of the British troops from the army of the allies. The clamor against this measure was great at that time, and the prejudices which this clamor raised are great still among some men. But as clamor raised these prejudices, other prejudices gave birth to this clamor: and it is no wonder they should do for among persons bent on continuing the war; fince I own very freely, that when the first step that led to this separation came to my knowledge, which was not an hour, by the way, before I writ by the queen's order to the duke of Ormond, in the very words in which the order was advised and given, "that he " should not engage in any siege, nor ha-" zard a battle, till further order," I was fur-

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. furprised and hurt. So much, that if I had had an opportunity of speaking in private to the queen, after I had received monsieur De Torcy's letter to me on the fubject, and before she went into the council, I should have spoken to her, I think, in the first heat, against it. The truth is, however, that the step was justifiable at that point of time in every respect, and therefore that the consequences are to be charged to the account of those who drew them on themselves, not to the account of the queen, nor of the minister who advised her. The step was justifiable to the allies furely, fince the queen took no more upon her, no not fo much by far, in making it, as many of them had done by fuspending, or endangering, or defeating operations in the heat of the war, when they declined to fend their troops, or delayed the march of them, or neglected the preparations they were obliged to make, on the most frivolous pretences. Your lordship will find in the course of your enquiries many particular instances of what is here pointed out in general. But I cannot help descending into some few of those that regard the emperor and the States General, who cried the loudest and with the most effect, tho they had the least reason, on account of their  $Z_4$ own

own conduct, to complain of the queen's. With what face could the emperor, for instance, presume to complain of the orders fent to the duke of Ormond? I fay nothing of his deficiencies, which were fo great, that he had at this very time little more than one regiment that could be faid properly to act against France and Spain at his fole charge; as I affirmed to prince EUGENE before the lords of the council. and demonstrated upon paper the next day. I fay nothing of all that preceded the year one thousand seven hundred and seven, on which I should have much to fay. But I defire your lordship only to consider, what you will find to have passed after the famous year one thousand seven hundred and Was it with the queen's approbation, or against her will, that the emperor made the treaty for the evacuation of Lombarand let out so great a number of French regiments time enough to recruit themselves at home, to march into Spain, and to destroy the British forces at Almanza? Was it with her approbation, or against her will, that, instead of employing all his forces and all his endeavours, to make the greatest design of the whole war, the enterprife on Toulon, succeed, he detached twelve thousand men to reduce the kingdom of

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 361 of Naples, that must have fallen of course? and that an opportunity of ruining the whole maritime force of France, and of ruining or subduing her provinces on that side, was lost, merely by this unnecessary diversion, and by the conduct of prince Eugene, which left no room to doubt that he gave occasion to this satal disappointmen on purpose, and in concert with the court of Vienna?

Turn your eyes, my lord, on the conduct of the States, and you will find reafon to be aftonished at the arrogance of the men who governed in them at this time, and who prefumed to exclaim against a queen of Great Britain, for doing what their deputies had done more than once in that very country, and in the course of that very war. In the year one thousand seven hundred and twelve, at the latter end of a war, when conferences for treating a peace were opened, when the least finister event in the field would take off from that fuperiority which the allies had in the congress, and when the past success of the war had already given them as much of this fuperiority as they wanted to obtain a fafe, advantageous, honorable, and lafting peace, the queen directed her general to suspend

till further order the operations of her troops. In one thousand seven hundred and three, in the beginning of a war, when fomething was to be rifqued or no fuccess to be expected, and when the bad fituation of affairs in Germany and Italy required, in a particular manner, that efforts should be made in the Low Countries, and that the war should not languish there whilst it was unfuccessful every where else; the duke of MARLBOROUH determined to attack the French, but the Dutch deputies would not fuffer their troops to go on; defeated his delign in the very moment of it's execution, if I remember well, and gave no other reafon for their proceeding than that which is a reason against every battle, the possibility of being beaten. The circumstance of proximity to their frontier was urged, I know, and it was faid, that their provinces would be exposed to the incursions of the French if they loft the battle. But befides other infwers to this vain pretence, it was obvious that they had ventured battles as near home as this would have been fought, and that the way to remove the enemy farther off was by action, not inaction. Upon the whole matter; the Dutch deputies stopped the progress of the confederate army at this time, by exercifing an arbitrary and inde-

#### Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 363

independent authority over the troops of the States. In one thousand seven hundred and five, when the fuccess of the preceding campaign should have given them an entire confidence in the duke of MARLBOROUGH'S conduct, when returning from the Mofelle to the Low Countries he began to make himself and the common cause amends, for the disappointment which pique and jealoufy in the prince of BADEN, or usual sloth and negligence in the Germans, had occafioned just before, by forcing the French lines; when he was in the full pursuit of this advantage, and when he was marching to attack an enemy half defeated, and more than half-dispirited; nay when he had made his dispositions for attacking, and part of his troops had paffed the Dyle—the deputies of the States once more tied up his hands, took from him an opportunity too fair to be loft; for these, I think, were fome of the terms of his complaint: and in short the confederacy received an affront at least, where we might have obtained a victory. Let this that has been faid ferve as a specimen of the independency on the queen, her councils, and her generals, with which these powers acted in the course of the war; who were not ashamed to find fault that the queen, once, and at the lat-

ter end of it, prefumed to suspend the operations of her troops till farther order. But be it that they forefaw what this farther order would be. They forefaw then, that as foon as Dunkirk should be put into the queen's hands, fhe would confent to a fufpension of arms for two months, and invite them to do the fame. Neither this forefight, nor the strong declaration which the bishop of Bristol made by the queen's order at Utrecht, and which shewed them that her resolution was not taken to submit to the league into which they had entered against her, could prevail on them to make a right use of these two months, by endeavouring to renew their union and good understanding with the queen; tho I can say with the greatest truth, and they could not doubt of it at the time, that she would have gone more than half-way to meet them, and that her ministers would have done their utmost to bring it about. Even then we might have refumed the superiority we began to lofe in the congress; for, the queen and the States uniting, the principal allies would have united with them: and, in this case, it would have been so much the interest of France to avoid any chance of feeing the war renewed, that she must, and she would, have made sure of peace

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 365 peace, during the suspension, on much worse terms for herself and for Spain, than she made it afterwards. But the prudent and sober States continued to act like froward children, or like men drunk with resentment and passion; and such will the conduct be of the wise governments in every circumstance, where a spirit of fac-

tion and of private interest prevails, among those who are at the head, over reason of state. After laying aside all decency in their behaviour towards the queen, they laid aside all caution for themselves. They declared "they would carry on the war "without her." Landrecy seemed, in their esteem, of more importance than Dunkirk; and the opportunity of wasting some French provinces, or of putting the whole event of the war on the decision of another battle, preserable to the other meafure that lay open to them; that, I mean,

Is the confederate army had broke into France, the campaign before this, or in any former campaign; and if the Germans and

of trying in good earnest, and in an honest concert with the queen, during the suspenfion of arms, whether such terms of peace, as ought to satisfy them and the other allies, might not be imposed on France.

and the Dutch had exercised then the same inhumanity, as the French had exercised in their provinces in former wars; if they had burnt Verfailles, and even Paris, and if they had disturbed the ashes of the dead princes that repose at Saint Denis, every good man would have felt the horror, that fuch cruelties inspire: no man could have faid that the retaliation was unjust. But in one thousand seven hundred and twelve. it was too late, in every respect, to meditate such projects. If the French had been unprepared to defend their frontier, either for want of means, or in a vain confidence that the peace would be made, as our king CHARLES the fecond was unprepared to defend his coast at the latter end of his first war with Holland, the allies might have played a fure game in fatisfying their vengeance on the French, as the Dutch did on us in one thousand fix hundred and fixty feven; and imposing harder terms on them, than those they offered, or would have accepted. But this was not the cafe. The French army was, I believe, more numerous than the army of the allies, even before separation, and certainly in a much better condition than two or three years before, when a deluge of blood was spilt to dislodge them, for we did no more, at Mal-

### Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 367

Malplaquet. Would the Germans and the Dutch have found it more easy to force them at this time, than it was at that? Would not the French have fought with as much obstinacy to fave Paris, as they did to fave Mons? and, with all the regard due to the duke of Ormond and to prince Eugene was the absence of the duke of Marlborough of no confequence? Turn this affair every way in your thoughts. my lord, and you will find that the Germans and the Dutch had nothing in theirs, but to break, at any rate, and at any rifque. the negotiations that were begun, and to reduce Great Britain to the necessity of continuing, what she had been too long, a province of the confederacy. A province indeed, and not one of the best treated: fince the confederates affumed a right of obliging her to keep her pacts with them. and of dispensing with their obligations to her, of exhausting her, without rule, or proportion, or measure, in the support of a war, to which she alone contributed more than all of them, and in which she had no longer an immediate interest, nor even any remote interest that was not common, or, with respect to her, very dubious; and, after all this, of complaining that the queen prefumed to hearken to overtures

368 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let.8. of peace, and to fet a negotiation on foot, whilft their humor and ambition required that the war should be prolonged for an indefinite time, and for a purpose that was either bad or indeter-

THE suspension of arms, that began in the Low Countries, was continued, and extended afterwards by the act I figned atc Fontainebleau. The fortune of the war turned at the same time: and all those disgraces followed, which obliged the Dutch to treat, and to defire the affiftance of the queen, whom they had fet at defiance fo lately. This affiftance they had, as effectually as it could be given in the circumstances, to which they had reduced themfelves, and the whole alliance: and the peace of Great Britain, Portugal, Savoy, Prussia, and the States General, was made, without his imperial majesty's concurrence, in the fpring of one thousand seven hundred and thirteen; as it might have been made, much more advantageously for them all, in that of one thousand seven hundred and twelve. Less obstinacy on the part of the States, and perhaps more decifive refolutions on the part of the queen, would have wound up all these divided threads in

minate.

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 369 one, and have finished this great work much sooner and better. I say, perhaps more decisive resolutions on the part of the queen; because, altho I think that I should have conveyed her orders for signing a treaty of peace with France, before the armies took the field, much more willingly, than I executed them afterwards in signing that of the cessation of arms; yet I do not presume to decide, but shall desire your lordship to do so, on a review of all circumstances, some of which I shall just mention.

THE league made for protracting the war having opposed the queen to the utmost of their power, and by means of every fort, from the first appearances of a negotiation; the general effect of this violent opposition, on her and her ministers was, to make them proceed by flower and more cautious steps: the particular effect of it was, to oblige them to open the eyes of the nation, and to inflame the people with a defire of peace, by shewing, in the most public and folemn manner, how unequally we were burdened, and how unfairly we were treated by our allies. The first gave an air of diffidence and timidity to their conduct, which encouraged the league, and Aa

370 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. gave vigor to the opposition. The second irritated the Dutch particularly; for the emperor and the other allies had the modefty at least, not to pretend to bear any proportion in the expence of the war: and thus the two powers, whose union was the most effential, were the most at variance, and the queen was obliged to act in a closer concert with her enemy who defired peace, than she would have done if her allies had been less obstinately bent to protract the During these transactions, my lord Oxford, who had his correspondencies apart, and a private thread of negotiation always in his hands, entertained hopes that PHILIP would be brought to abandon Spain in favor of his father-in-law, and to content himself with the states of that prince, the kingdom of Sicily, and the preservation of his right of fuccession to the crown of France. Whether my lord had any particular reasons for entertaining these hopes, belides the general reasons founded on the condition of France, on that of the Bourbon family, and on the disposition of Lewis the fourteenth, I doubt very much. That Lewis, who fought, and had need of feeking peace, almost at any rate, and who faw that he could not obtain it, even of the queen, unless Philip abandoned immediately

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. mediately the crown of Spain, or abandoned immediately, by renunciation and a folemn act of exclusion, all pretension to that of France; that Lewis was defirous of the former, I cannot doubt. That PHILIP would have abandoned Spain with the equivalents that have been mentioned, or either of them, I believe likewise; if the present king of FRANCE had died, when his father, mother, and eldest brother did: for they all had the fame distemper. But Lewis would use no violent means to force his grandson; the queen would not continue the war to force him; PHILIP was too obstinate, and his wife too ambitious, to quit the crown of Spain, when they had discovered our weakness, and felt their own strength in that country, by their fuccess in the campaign of one thousand seven hundred and ten: after which my lord STAN-HOPE himself was convinced that Spain could not be conquered, nor kept, if it was conquered, without a much greater army, than it was possible for us to fend thither. In that situation it was wild to imagine, as the earl of Oxford imagined, or pretended to imagine, that they would quit the crown of Spain, for a remote and uncertain prospect of succeeding to that of France, and content themselves to be, Aa2

in the mean time, princes of very small dominions. Philip therefore, after struggling long that he might not be obliged to make his option till the fuccession of France lay open to him, was obliged to make it, and made it, for Spain. Now this, my lord, was the very crifis of the negotiation: and to this point I apply what I faid above of the effect of more decifive resolutions on the part of the queen. It was plain, that, if she made the campaign in concert with her allies, she could be no longer mistress of the negotiations, nor have almost a chance for conducting them to the iffue she proposed. Our ill success in the field would have rendered the French less tractable in the congress: our good success there would have rendered the allies fo. On this principle the queen suspended the operations of her troops, and then concluded the ceffation.

COMPARE now the appearances and effect of this measure, with the appearances and effect that another measure would have had. In order to arrive at any peace, it was necessary to do what the queen did, or to do more: and, in order to arrive at a good one, it was necessary to be prepared to carry on the war, as well as to make a shew of it; for she had the hard task upon her,

her, of guarding against her allies, and her enemies both. But in that ferment, when few men confidered any thing coolly, the conduct of her general, after he took the field, tho he covered the allies in the fiege of Quesnoy, corresponded ill, in appearance, with the declarations of carrying on the war vigorously, that had been made, on feveral occasions, before the campaign opened. It had an air of double dealing; and as fuch it passed among those, who did not combine in their thoughts all the circumstances of the conjuncture, or who were infatuated with the notional necessity of continuing the war. The clamor could not have been greater, if the queen had figned her peace separately: and, I think, the appearances might have been explained as favorably in one case, as in the other. From the death of the emperor Joseph, it was neither our interest, nor the common interest, well understood, to set the crown of Spain on the present emperor's head. As foon therefore as Philip had made his option, and if she had taken this resolution early, his option would have been fooner made, I prefume that the queen might have declared, that she would not continue the war an hour longer to procure Spain for his Imperial majesty; that the Aa3 engage-

374 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. engagements, she had taken whilst he was archduke, bound her no more; that, by his accession to the empire, the very nature of them was altered; that she took effectual measures to prevent, in any future time, an union of the crowns of France and Spain, and, upon the same principle, would not confent, much less fight, to bring about an immediate union of the Imperial and Spanish crowns; that they, who infifted to protract the war, intended this union; that they could intend nothing elfe, fince they ventured to break with her, rather than to treat, and were fo eager to put the reasonable satisfaction, that they might have in every other case without hazard, on the uncertain events of war; that the would not be imposed on any longer in this manner, and that she had ordered her ministers to fign her treaty with France, on the furrender of Dunkirk into her hands; that the pretended not to prescribe to her allies, but that she had insisted, in their behalf, on certain conditions, that France was obliged to grant to those of them, who should fign their treaties at the same time as the did, or who should consent to an immediate ceffation of arms, and during the ceffation treat under her mediation. There had been more frankness, and more dignity

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. dignity in this proceeding, and the effect must have been more advantageous. France would have granted more for a separate peace, than for a ceffation: and the Dutch would have been more influenced by the prospect of one, than of the other: especially fince this proceeding would have been very different from theirs at Munster, and at Nimeghen, where they abandoned their allies, without any other pretence than the particular advantage they found in doing fo. A suspension of the operations of the queen's troops, nay a ceffation of arms between her and France, was not definitive; and they might, and they did, hope to drag her back under their, and the This therefore was not German yoke. fufficient to check their obstinacy, nor to hinder them from making all the unfortunate haste they did make to get themselves beaten at Denain. But they would poffibly have laid afide their vain hopes, if they had feen the queen's ministers ready to fign her treaty of peace, and those of some principal allies ready to fign at the fame time; in which case the mischief, that followed, had been prevented, and better terms of peace had been obtained for the confederacy: a prince of the house of Bourbon, who could never be king of France, would Aa4 have

have fat on the Spanish throne, instead of an emperor: the Spanish scepter would have been weakened in the hands of one, and the Imperial scepter would have been strengthened in those of the other: France would have had no opportunity of recovering from former blows, nor of finishing a long unfuccessful war by two fuccessful campaigns: her ambition, and her power, would have declined with her old king, and under the minority that followed: one of them at least might have been so reduced by the terms of peace, if the defeat of the allies in one thousand seven hundred and twelve, and the loss of so many towns as the French took in that and the following year, had been prevented, that the other would have been no longer formidable, even fuppofing it to have continued; whereas I suppose that the tranquility of Europe is more due, at this time, to want of ambition, than to want of power, on the part of France. But, to carry the comparison of these two measures to the end, it may be supposed that the Dutch would have taken the fame part, on the queen's declaring a separate peace, as they took on her declaring a ceffation. The preparations for the campaign in the Low countries were made; the Dutch, like the other confederates.

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 377 tederates, had a just confidence in their own troops, and an unjust contempt for those of the enemy; they were transported from their usual sobriety and caution by the ambitious prospect of large acquisitions, which had been opened artfully to them; the rest of the confederate army was composed of Imperial and German troops: fo that the Dutch, the Imperialifts, and the other Germans, having an interest to decide which was no longer the interest of the whole confederacy, they might have united against the queen in one case, as they did in the other; and the mischief, that followed to them and the common cause. might not have been prevented. might have been the case, no doubt. They might have flattered themselves that they should be able to break into France, and to force Philip, by the diffress brought on his grandfather, to refign the crown of Spain to the emperor, even after Great Britain, and Portugal, and Savoy too perhaps, were drawn out of the war; for these princes defired as little, as the queen, to fee the Spanish crown on the emperor's head. But, even in this case, tho the madness would have been greater, the effect would not have been worfe. The queen would have been able to serve these confederates

378 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. derates as well by being mediator in the negotiations, as they left it in her power to do, by being a party in them: and Great Britain would have had the advantage of being delivered fo much fooner from a burden, which whimfical and wicked politics had imposed, and continued upon her till it was become intolerable. Of these two measures, at the time when we might have taken either, there were persons who thought the last preferable to the former. But it never came into public debate. Indeed it never could; too much time having been loft in waiting for the option of PHILIP, and the suspension and cessation having been brought before the council rather as a measure taken, than a matter to be debated. If your lordship, or any one elfe, should judge, that, in such circumstances as those of the confederacy in the beginning of one thousand seven hundred and twelve, the latter measure ought to have been taken, and the Gordian knot to have been cut, rather than to fuffer a mock treaty to languish on, with so much advantage to the French as the difunion of the allies gave them; in short, if slowness, perplexity, inconfiftency, and indecision should be objected, in some instances, to the queen's councils at that time; if it fhould

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 379 should be faid particularly, that she did not observe the precise moment when the conduct of the league formed against her, being exposed to mankind, would have justified any part she should have taken (tho she declared, foon after the moment was paffed, that this conduct had fet her free from all her engagements) and when fhe ought to have taken that of drawing, by one bold measure, her allies out of the war, or herself out of the confederacy, before the loft her influence on France: if all this should be objected, yet would the proofs brought to support these objections shew, that we were better allies than politicians; that the delire the queen had to treat in concert with her confederates, and the resolution she took not to sign without them, made her bear what no crowned head had ever born before; and that where fhe erred, fhe erred principally by the patience, the compliance, and the condescenfion the exercised towards them, and towards her own fubjects in league with them. Such objections as these may lie to the queen's conduct, in the course of this great affair; as well as objections of human infirmity to that of those persons employed by her in the transactions of it; from which neither those who preceded,

nor those who succeeded, have, I presume, been free. But the principles on which they proceeded were honest, the means they used were lawful, and the event they proposed to bring about was just. Whereas the very foundation of all the opposition to the peace was laid in injustice and folly: for what could be more unjust, than the attempt of the Dutch and the Germans, to force the queen to continue a war for their private interest and ambition, the disproportionate expence of which oppressed the commerce of her subjects, and loaded them with debts for ages yet to come? a war, the object of which was fo changed, that from the year one thousand seven hundred and eleven she made it not only without any engagement, but against her own, and the common interest? What could be more foolish; you will think that I foften the term too much, and you will be in the right to think fo: what could be more foolish, than the attempt of a party in Brirain, to protract a war fo ruinous to their country, without any reason that they durst avow, except that of wreaking the refentments of Europe on France, and that of uniting the Imperial and Spanish crowns on an Austrian head? one of which was to purchase revenge at a price too dear; and the

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 381 the other was to expose the liberties of Europe to new dangers, by the conclusion of a war which had been made to affert and secure them.

I HAVE dwelt the longer on the conduct of those who promoted, and of those who opposed, the negotiations of the peace made at Utrecht, and on the comparison of the measure pursued by the queen with that which she might have pursued, because the great benefit we ought to reap from the study of history, cannot be reaped unless we accustom ourselves to compare the conduct of different governments, and different parties, in the same conjunctures, and to observe the measures they did pursue, and the measures they might have pursued, with the actual confequences that followed one, and the possible, or probable confequences, that might have followed the other. By this exercise of the mind, the study of history anticipates, as it were, experience, as I have observed in one of the first of these letters, and prepares us for If this confideration should not action. plead a fufficient excuse for my prolixity on this head, I have one more to add that may. A rage of warring possessed a party in our nation till the death of the late queen ;

282 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. queen: a rage of negotiating has possessed the same party of men, ever since. You have feen the confequences of one: you fee actually those of the other. The rage of warring confirmed the beggary of our nation, which began as early as the revolution; but then it gave, in the last war, reputation to our arms, and our councils For tho I think, and must always think, that the principle, on which we acted after departing from that laid down in the grand alliance of one thousand seven hundred and one, was wrong: yet must we confess that it was pursued wisely, as well as boldly. The rage of negotiating has been a chargeable rage likewife, at least as chargeable in it's proportion. Far from paying our debts, contracted in war, they continue much the same, after three and twenty years of peace. The taxes that oppress our mercantile interest the most are still in mortgage; and those that oppress the landed interest the most, instead of being laid on extraordinary occasions, are become the ordinary funds for the current fervice of every year. This is grievous, and the more so to any man, who has the honor of his country, as well as her profperity at heart, because we have not, in this case, the airy consolation we had in the

Let.8. and State of EUROPE. 383 the other. The rage of negotiating began twenty years ago, under pretence of confummating the treaty of Utrecht: and, from that time to this, our ministers have been in one perpetual maze. They have made themselves and us, often, objects of aversion to the powers on the continent: and we are become at last objects of contempt, even to the Spaniards. What other effect could our abfurd conduct have? What other return has it deferved? We came exhaufted out of long wars; and, instead of pursuing the measures necessary to give us means and opportunity to repair our strength and to diminish our burdens, our ministers have acted, from that time to this, like men who lought pretences to keep the nation in the fame exhaufted condition, and under the fame load of debt. This may have been their view perhaps: and we could not be surprised if we heard the fame men declare national poverty neceffary to support the present government, who have fo frequently declared corruption and a standing army to be so. Your good fense, my lord, your virtue, and your love of your country, will always determine you to oppose such vile schemes, and to contribute your utmost towards the cure of both these kinds of rage; the rage of warring,

warring, without any proportionable interest of our own, for the ambition of others; and the rage of negotiating, on every occasion, at any rate, without a sufficient call to it, and without any part of that deciding influence which we ought to have. Our nation inhabits an island, and is one of the principal nations of Europe; but, to maintain this rank, we must take the advantages of this fituation, which have been neglected by us for almost half a century: we must always remember, that we are not part of the continent, but we must never forget that we are neighbours to it. I will conclude, by applying a rule, that HORACE gives for the conduct of an epic or dramatic poem, to the part Great Britain ought to take in the affairs of the continent, if you allow me to transform Britannia into a male divinity, as the verse requires.

NecDeus intersit, nist dignus vindice nodus Inciderit.

If these reslections are just, and I should not have offered them to your lordship had they not appeared both just and important to my best understanding, you will think that I have not spent your time unprofitably Let.8. and State of EUROPE. 385 in making them, and exciting you by them to examine the true interest of your country relatively to foreign affairs; and to compare it with those principles of conduct, that I am persuaded, have no other foundation than party-designs, prejudices, and habits; the private interest of some men and the ignorance and rashness of others.

My letter is grown fo long, that I shall fay nothing to your lordship, at this time concerning the study of modern history, relatively to the interests of your country in domestic affairs; and I think there will be no need to do fo at any other. The History of the rebellion by your great grandfather, and his private memorials, which your lordship has in manuscript, will guide you furely as far as they go: where they leave you, your lordship must not expect any history; for we have more reason to make this complaint, " abest enim hi-"ftoria literis nostris," than Tully had to put it into the mouth of ATTICUS, in his first book of laws. But where history leaves you, it is wanted leaft: the traditions of this century, and of the latter end of the last, are fresh. Many, who were actors in some of these events, are alive; and many who have conversed with those ВЬ

that were actors in others. The public is in possession of several collections and memorials, and feveral there are in private hands. You will want no materials to form true notions of transactions so recent. Even pamphlets, writ on different fides and on different occasions in our party disputes, and histories of no more authority than pamphlets, will help you to come at truth. Read them with fuspicion, my lord, for they deferve to be suspected: pay no regard to the epithets given, nor to the judgments passed; neglect all declamation, weigh the reasoning, and advert to fact. With fuch precautions, even Burner's history may be of some use. In a word, your lordship will want no help of mine to difcover, by what progression the whole constitution of our country, and even the character of our nation, has been altered: nor how much a worfe use, in a national fense, tho a better in the sense of party politicks, the men called Whigs have made of long wars and new fystems of revenue. fince the revolution; than the men called Tories made, before it, of long peace, and stale prerogative. When you look back three or four generations ago, you will fee that the English were a plain, perhaps a rough, but a good-natured hospitable peo-

#### Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. 387

ple, jealous of their liberties, and able as well as ready to defend them, with their tongues, their pens, and their fwords. The restoration began to turn hospitality into luxury, pleasure into debauch, and country peers and country commoners into courtiers and men of mode. But whilst our luxury was young, it was little more than elegance: the debauch of that age was enlivened with wit, and varnished over with gallantry. The courtiers and the men of mode knew what the constitution was, respected it, and often afferted it. Arts and sciences flourished, and, if we grew more trivial, we were not become either grossly ignorant, or openly profligate. Since the revolution, our kings have been reduced indeed to a feeming annual dependance on parliament; but the business of parliament, which was esteemed in general a duty before, has been exercised in general as a trade fince. The trade of parliament, and the trade of funds, have grown universal. Men, who stood forward in the world, have attended to little elfe. frequency of parliaments, that increased their importance, and should have increased the respect of them, has taken off from their dignity: and the spirit that prevailed, whilft the fervice in them was duty, has B b 2 been

288 A Sketch of the HISTORY Let. 8. been debased since it became a trade. Few know, and scarce any respect, the British constitution: that of the church has been long fince derided; that of the State as long neglected; and both have been left at the mercy of the men in power, whoever those men were. Thus the Church. at least the hierarchy, however facred in it's origin or wife in it's institution, is become an useless burden on the State: and the State is become, under ancient and known forms, a new and undefinable monfter; composed of a king without monarchical splendor, a senate of nobles without ariftocratical independency, and a fenate of commons without democratical freedom. In the mean time, my lord, the very idea of wit, and all that can be called tafte, has been lost among the great; arts and sciences are fearce alive; luxury has been increased but not refined; corruption has been established, and is avowed. When governments are worn out, thus it is: the decay. appears in every inftance. Public and private virtue, public and private spirit, science and wit, decline all together.

THAT you, my lord, may have a long and glorious fhare in restoring all these, and in drawing our government back to

Let. 8. and State of EUROPE. the true principles of it, I wish most heartily. Whatever errors I may have committed in public life, I have always loved my country: whatever faults may be objected to me in private life, I have always loved my friend: whatever usage I have received from my country, it shall never make me break with her: whatever usage I have received from my friends, I never shall break with one of them, while I think him a friend to my country. These are the fentiments of my heart. I know they are those of your lordship's: and a communion of fuch fentiments is a tye that will engage me to be, as long as I live,

My lord,

Your most faithful fervant.



## APLAN

FORA

# General History of Europe.

#### LETTER I.

SHALL take the liberty of writing to you a little oftener than the three or four times a year, which, you tell me, are all you can allow yourfelf to write to those you like best: and yet I declare to you with great truth, that you never knew me fo busy in your life, as I am at present. You must not imagine from hence, that I am writing memoirs of myfelf. The fubject is too flight to descend to posterity, in any other manner, than by that occasional mention which may be made of any little actor in the history of our age. Sylla, CAESAR, and others of that rank, were, whilst they lived, at the head of mankind: their story was in some fort the story of the B b 4 world,

A Plan for a Let. I. 392 world, and as fuch might very properly be transmitted under their names to future generations. But for those who have acted much inferior parts, if they publish the piece, and call it after their own names, they are impertinent; if they publish only their own share in it, they inform mankind by halves, and neither give much instruction, nor create much attention. France abounds with writers of this fort, and, I think, we fall into the other extreme. Let me tell you, on this occasion, what has fometimes come into my thoughts.

THERE is hardly any century in history which began by opening so great a scene, as the century wherein we live, and shall I suppose, die. Compare it with others, even the most famous, and you will think so. I will sketch the two last, to help your memory.

The loss of that balance which Laurence of Medicis had preserved, during his time, in Italy; the expedition of Charles the eighth to Naples; the intrigues of the duke of Milan, who spun, with all the refinements of art, that net wherein he was taken at last himself; the successful dexterity of Ferdinand the Catholic,

Let. I. General History of EUROPE. 393 tholic, who built one pillar of the Austrian greatness in Spain, in Italy, and in the Indies; as the succession of the house of Burgundy, joined to the Imperial dignity and the hereditary countries, established another in the upper and lower Germany: these causes, and many others, combined to form a very extraordinary conjuncture; and, by their consequences, to render the sixteenth century fruitful of great events, and of astonishing revolutions.

THE beginning of the seventeenth opened still a greater and more important scene. The Spanish yoke was well-nigh imposed on Italy by the famous triumvirate, Toledo at Milan, Ossuna at Naples, and La-Cueva at Venice. The distractions of France, as well as the state-policy of the queen mother, feduced by Rome, and amused by Spain; the despicable character of our James the first, the rashness of the elector Palatine, the bad intelligence of the princes and states of the league in Germany, the mercenary temper of John George of Saxony, and the great qualities of Maxi-MILIAN of Bavaria, raised FERDINAND the fecond to the Imperial throne; when, the males of the elder branch of the Austrian family in Germany being extinguished at

# 394 A PLAN for a Let. 1.

the death of MATTHIAS, nothing was more defirable, nor perhaps more practicable, than to throw the empire into another house. Germany ran the same risque as Italy had done: Ferdinand seemed more likely, even than Charles the fifth had been, to become absolute master; and, if France had not furnished the greatest minister, and the North the greatest captain, of that age, in the same point of time, Vienna and Madrid would have given the law to the western world.

As the Austrian scale sunk, that of Bourbon rose. The true date of the rise of that power, which has made the kings of France so considerable in Europe, goes up as high as CHARLES the feventh, and Lewis the The weakness of our HENRY eleventh. the fixth, the loose conduct of EDWARD the fourth, and perhaps the overfights of HENRY the seventh, helped very much to knit that monarchy together, as well as to enlarge it. Advantage might have been taken of the divisions which religion occafioned; and supporting the protestant party in France would have kept that crown under restraints, and under inabilities, in fome measure equal to those which were occasioned anciently by the vast alienations

# Let. 1. General History of Europe. 395

of its demesnes, and by the exorbitant odwer of its vassals. But James the first was incapable of thinking with sense, or acting with spirit. Charles the first had an impersect glimpse of his true interest, but his uxorious temper, and the extravagancy of that madman Buckingham, gave Richelieu time to sinish a great part of his project: and the miseries, that followed in England, gave Mazarin time and opportunity to complete the system. The last great act of this cardinal's administration was the Pyrenean treaty.

HERE I would begin, by representing the face of Europe such as it was at that epocha, the interests and the conduct of England, France, Spain, Holland, and A fummary recapitulation the empire. should follow of all the steps taken by France, during more than twenty years, to arrive at the great object she had proposed to herfelf in making this treaty: the most folemn article of which the minister, who negotiated it, defigned should be violated; as appears by his letters, writ from the Island of Pheasants, if I mistake not. After this, another draught of Europe should have it's place according to the relations, which the feveral powers stood in, one towards

A PLAN for a 396 Let. I. wards another, in one thousand fix hundred and eighty eight: and the alterations which the revolution in England made in the politicks of Europe. A fummary account should follow of the events of the war that ended in one thousand fix hundred and ninety feven, with the different views of king WILLIAM the third, and Lewis the fourteenth, in making the peace of Ryswic; which matter has been much canvaffed, and is little understood. Then the dispositions made by the partition-treaties, and the influences and confequences of these treaties; and a third draught of the state of Europe at the death of CHARLES the fecond of Spain. All this would make the fubject of one or two books, and would be the most proper introduction imaginable to an history of that war with which our century began, and of the peace which followed.

This war, foreseen for above half a century, had been, during all that time, the great and constant object of the councils of Europe. The prize to be contended for was the richest that ever had been staked, since those of the Persian and Roman empires. The union of two powers, which separately, and in opposition, had aimed

Let. 1. General History of EUROPE. 397 at universal monarchy, was apprehended. The confederates therefore engaged in it. to maintain a balance between the two houses of Austria and Bourbon, in order to preserve their security, and to affert their independance. But with the success of the war they changed their views: and, if ambition began it on the side of France. ambition continued it on the other. The battles, the fieges, the furprifing revolutions, which happened in the course of this war, are not to be paralleled in any period of the same compass. The motives. and the measures, by which it was protracted, the true reasons why it ended in a manner, which appeared not proportionable to it's fuccess; and the new political state into which Europe was thrown by the treaties of Utrecht and Baden, are subjects on which few persons have the necesfary informations, and yet every one speaks with affurance, and even with paffion. think I could speak on them with some knowledge, and with as much indifference as Polybius does of the negotiations of his father Lycortas, even in those points where I was myself an actor.

I will even confess to you, that I should not despair of performing this part better than

than the former. There is nothing in my opinion fo hard to execute, as those political maps, if you will allow me fuch an expression, and those systems of hints, rather than relations of events, which are necessary to connect and explain them; and which must be so concise, and yet so full; fo complicate, and yet fo clear. I know nothing of this fort well done by the antients. Sallust's introduction, as well as that of Thucydides, might ferve almost for any other piece of the Roman or Greek story, as well as for those which these two great authors chose. Polybius does not come up, in his introduction, to this idea Among the moderns, the first book of Machiavel's History of Florence is a noble original of this kind: and perhaps father Paul's History of Benefices is, in the fame kind of composition, inimitable.

THESE are a few of those thoughts, which come into my mind when I consider how incumbent it is on every man, that he should be able to give an account even of his leisure; and, in the midst of solitude, be of some use to society.

I know not whether I shall have courage enough to undertake the task I have chalked

# Let. 1. General History of EUROPE. 399

chalked out: I distrust my abilities with reason, and I shall want several informations, not easy, I doubt, for me to obtain. But, in all events, it will not be possible for me to go about it this year; the reasons of which would be long enough to fill another letter, and I doubt that you will think this grown too bulky already.

Adieu.

[ 401 ]

OFTHE

TRUE USE

OF

RETIREMENT and STUDY:

To the Right Honourable

Lord BATHURST.

#### LETTER II.

SINCE my last to your lordship, this is the first favorable opportunity I have had of keeping the promise I made you. I will avoid prolixity, as much as I can, in the first draught of my thoughts; but I must give you them as they rise in my mind, without staying to marshal them in close order.

As proud as we are of human reason, nothing can be more absurd than the general system of human life, and human knowledge. This faculty of distinguishing true from false, right from wrong, and Cc what

what is agreeable, from what is repugnant, to nature, either by one act, or by a longer process of intuition, has not been given with so sparing a hand, as many appearances would make us apt to believe. If it was cultivated, therefore, as early, and as carefully as it might be, and if the exercise of it was left generally as free as it ought to be, our common notions and opinions would be more consonant to truth than they are: and, truth being but one, they would be more uniform likewise.

But this rightful mistress of human life and knowledge, whose proper office it is to preside over both, and to direct us in the conduct of one and the pursuit of the other, becomes degraded in the intellectual oeconomy. She is reduced to a mean and fervile state, to the vile drudgery of conniving at principles, defending opinions, and confirming habits, that are none of They, who do her most honor, who confult her oftenest, and obey her too very often, are still guilty of limiting her authority according to maxims, and rules, and schemes, that chance, or ignorance, or interest, first devised, and that custom fanctifies: custom, that result of the pasfions and prejudices of many, and of the defigns

#### Let. 2. RETIREMENT and STUDY. 403

designs of a few: that ape of reason, who usurps her seat, exercises her power, and is obeyed by mankind in her stead. Men find it easy, and government makes it profitable, to concur in established systems of speculation and practice: and the whole turn of education prepares them to live upon credit all their lives. Much pains are taken, and time bestowed, to teach us what to think; but little or none of either. to instruct us how to think. The magazine of the memory is stored and stuffed betimes: but the conduct of the understanding is all along neglected, and the free exercise of it is, in effect, forbid in all places, and in terms in fome.

THERE is a strange distrust of human reason in every human institution: this distrust is so apparent, that an habitual submission to some authority, or other, is forming in us from our cradles; that principles of reasoning, and matters of fact, are inculcated in our tender minds, before we are able to express that reason, and that, when we are able to exercise it, we are either forbid, or frightened from doing so, even on things that are themselves the proper objects of reason, or that are delicated.

vered to us upon an authority whose sufficiency or insufficiency is so most evidently.

On many subjects, such as the general laws of natural religion, and the general rules of fociety and good policy, men of all countries and languages, who cultivate their reason, judge alike. The same premifes have led them to the fame conclufions, and fo, following the fame guide, they have trod in the same path: at least, the differences are small, easily reconciled, and fuch as could not, of themselves, contradiftinguish nation from nation, religion from religion, and fect from fect. How comes it then, that there are other points, on which the most opposite opinions are entertained, and some of these with so much heat, and fury, that the men on one fide of the hedge will die for the affirmative, and the men on the other for the negative? " Toute opinion est affez forte pour se faire épouser au prix de la vie," favs Montagne, whom I often quote, as I do Seneca, rather for the imartness of expression, than the weight or newness of matter. Look narrowly into it, and you will find that the points agreed on, and the points disputed, are not proportionable to the common

### Let.2. RETIREMENT and STUDY. 405

common fense and general reason of mankind. Nature and truth are the fame every where, and reason shews them every where alike. But the accidental and other causes, which give rife and growth to opinions, both in speculation and practice, are of infinite variety; and where ever these opinions are once confirmed by custom and propagated by education, various, inconfiftent, contradictory as they are, they all pretend (and all their pretences are backed by pride, by passion, and by interest) to have reason, or revelation, or both, on their fide; tho neither reason or revelation can be possibly on the side of more than one, and may be possibly on the side of none.

Thus it happens that the people of Tibet are Tartars and idolaters, that they are Turks and Mahometans at Constantinople, Italians and Papists at Rome; and how much soever education may be less confined, and the means of knowledge more attainable, in France and our own country, yet thus it happens in great measure that Frenchmen and Roman Catholics are bred at Paris, and Englishmen and protestants at London. For men, indeed, properly speaking, are bred no where: every one Cc3 thinks

thinks the fystem, as he speaks the language, of his country, at least there are few that think, and none that act, in any country, according to the dictates of pure unbiassed reason; unless they may be said to do so, when reason directs them to speak and act according to the system of their country, or sect, at the same time as she leads them to think according to that of nature and truth.

Thus the far greatest part of mankind appears reduced to a lower state than other animals, in that very respect, on account of which we claim fo great superiority over them; because instinct, that has its due effect, is preferable to reason that has not. I suppose in this place, with philosophers, and the vulgar, that which I am in no wife ready to affirm, that other animals have no share of human reason: for, let me say by the way, it is much more likely other animals should share the human, which is denied, than that man should share the divine reason, which is affirmed. But, supposing our monopoly of reason, would not your lordship chuse to walk upon four legs, to wear a long tail, and to be called a beaft, with the advantage of being determined by irrefiftible and unerring instinct to those truths

Let.2. RETIREMENTANDSTUDY. 407 truths that are necessary to your well-being; rather than to walk on two legs, to wear no tail, and to be honored with the title of man, at the expence of deviating from them perpetually? Instinct acts spontaneoully whenever it's action is necessary, and directs the animal according to the purpose for which it was implanted in him. Reason is a nobler and more extensive faculty; for it extends to the unnecessary as well as necessary, and to fatisfy our curioficy as well as our wants: but reason must be excited, or the will remain inactive; the must be left free, or she will conduct us wrong, and carry us farther aftray from herown precincts than we should go without her help: in the first case, we have no sufficient guide; and in the second, the more we employ our reason, the more unreasonable we are.

Now if all this be so, if reason has so little, and ignorance, passion, interest, and custom so much to do, in forming our opinions and our habits, and in directing the whole conduct of human life; is it not a thing desireable by every thinking man, to have the opportunity, indulged to so few by the course of accidents, the opportunity "secum esse, et secum vivere," of living some years at least to ourselves, and C c 4

# 408 Of the true Use of Let. 2.

for ourselves, in a state of freedom, under the laws of reason, instead of passing our whole time in a state of vassalage under those of authority and custom? Is it not worth our while to contemplate ourselves, and others, and all the things of this world, once before we leave them, through the medium of pure, and, if I may say so, of undefiled reason? Is it not worth our while to approve or condemn, on our own authority, what we receive in the beginning of life on the authority of other men, who were not then better able to judge for us, then we are now to judge for ourselves?

That this may be done, and has been done to some degree, by men who remained much more mingled than I design to be for the future, in the company and business of the world, I shall not deny: but still it is better done in retreat, and with greater ease and pleasure. Whilst we remain in the world, we are all fettered down, more or less, to one common level, and have neither all the leisure, nor all the means and advantages, to soar above it, which we may procure to ourselves, by breaking these fetters, in retreat. To talk of abstracting ourselves from matter, laying aside body, and being resolved, as it were,

# Let.2. RETIREMENT and STUDY. 409

were, into pure intellect, is proud, metaphysical, unmeaning jargon: but to abstract ourselves from the prejudices, and habits, and pleasures, and business of the world, is no more than many are, tho all are not, capable of doing. They who can do this, may elevate their fouls in retreat to an higher station, and may take from thence such a view of the world, as the second Scipio took in his dream, from the feats of the bleffed, when the whole earth appeared fo little to him, that he could scarce discern that speck of dirt, the Roman empire. Such a view as this will encrease our knowledge by shewing us our ignorance; will diftinguish every degree of probability from the lowest to the higheft, and mark the distance between that and certainty; will dispel the intoxicating fumes of philosophical presumption, and teach us to establish our peace of mind, where alone it can rest securely, in resignation: in short, such a view will render life more agreeable, and death less terrible. Is not this business, my lord? Is not this pleasure too, the highest pleasure? The world can afford us none fuch; we must retire from the world to tafte it with a full gust; but we shall taste it the better for having been in the world. The share of fenfual

fenfual pleasures, that a man of my age can promife himfelt, is hardly worth attention: he should be fated, he will be foon disabled, and very little reflection furely will fuffice, to make his habits of this kind dose their power over him, in proportion at least as his power of indulging them diminishes. Besides, your lordship knows that my scheme of retirement excludes none of these pleasures that can be taken with decency and conveniency; and to fay the rruth, I believe that I allow myself more in speculation, than I shall find I want in practice. As to the habits of business, they can have no hold on one who has been to long tired with it. You may object, that tho a man has discarded these habits, and has not even the embers of ambition about him to revive them, yet he cannot renounce all public business as absolutely as I feem to do; because a better principle, a principle of duty, may fummen him to the service of his country. I will answer No man has you with great fincerity. higher notions of this duty than I have. I think that scarce any age, or circumstances can discharge us entirely from it; no, not my own. But as we are apt to take the impulse of our own passions, for a call to the performance of this duty; fo when

Let. 2. RETIREMENT and STUDY. 411 when these passions impel us no longer, the call that puts us upon action must be real, and loud too. Add to this, that there are different methods, proportioned to different circumstances and fituations. of performing the same duty. In the midft of retreat, where ever it may be fixed, I may contribute to defend and preferve the British constitution of government: and you, my lord, may depend upon me, that whenever I can, I will. Should any one afk you, in this case, from whom I expect my reward? Answer him by declaring to whom I pay this fervice; " Deo immortali, qui me non accipere " modo haec a majoribus voluit, sed etiam " posteris prodere."

Bur, to lead the life I propose with satisfaction and profit, renouncing the pleafures and business of the world, and breaking the habits of both, is not sufficient: the supine creature whose understanding is superficially employed, through life, about a few general notions, and is never bent to a close and steady pursuit of truth, may renounce the pleasures and business of the world, for even in the business of the world we see such creatures often employed, and may break the habits; nay he may re-

tire and drone away life in folitude, like a monk, or like him over the door of whose house, as if his house had been his tomb. fomebody writ, " Here lies fuch an one." But no fuch man will be able to make the true use of retirement. The employment of his mind, that would have been agreeable and easy if he had accustomed himself to it early, will be unpleasant and impracticable late: fuch men lose their intellectual powers for the want of exerting them, and, having trifled away youth, are reduced to the necessity of trifling away age. It fares with the mind just as it does with the body. He who was born with a texture of brain as strong as that of Newton, may become unable to perform the common rules of arithmetic: just as he who has the same elafticity in his muscles, the same suppleness in his joints, and all his nerves and finews as well braced as JACOB HALL, may become a fat unwieldy fluggard. Yet farther, the implicit creature, who has thought it all his life needless, or unlawful, to examine the principles or facts that he took originally on trust, will be as little able as the other, to improve his folitude to any good purpose: unless we call it a good purpose, for that sometimes happens, to confirm and exalt his prejudices, so that

### Let.2. RETIREMENT and STUDY. 413

he may live and die in one continued delirium. The confirmed prejudices of a thoughtful life are as hard to change as the confirmed habits of an indolent life: and as some must trifle away age because they have trifled away youth, others must labor on in a maze of error, because they have wandered there too long to find their way out.

THERRE is a prejudice in China in favor of little feet, and therefore the feet of girls are fwathed and bound up from the cradle, fo that the women of that country are unable to walk without tottering and stumbling all their lives. Among the favages of America, there are some who hold flat heads and long ears in great efteem, and therefore press the one, and draw down the others so hard from their infancy, that they destroy irrecoverably the true proportions of nature, and continue all their lives ridiculous to every fight but their own. Just fo, the first of these characters cannot make any progress, and the second will not attempt to make any, in an impartial fearch after real knowledge.

To fet about acquiring the habits of meditation and study late in life, is like getting getting into a go-cart with a grey beard' and learning to walk when we have loft the use of our legs. In general the foundations of an happy old age must be laid in youth: and in particular, he who has not cultivated his reason young, will be utterly unable to improve it old. "Manent" ingenia senibus, modo permaneant stu-" dium et industria."

Nor only a love of study, and a desire of knowledge, must have grown up with us, but such an industrious application likewise, as requires the whole vigor of the mind to be exerted in the pursuit of truth, through long trains of ideas, and all those dark recesses wherein man, not God, has hid it.

This love and this defire I have felt all my life, and I am not quite a stranger to this industry and application. There has been something always ready to whisper in my ear, whilst I ran the course of pleasure and of business,

" Solve senescentem mature sanus equum."

But my Genius, unlike the demon of Socrates, whispered so softly, that very often

### Let.2. RETIREMENT and STUDY. 415

often I heard him not, in the hurry of those passions by which I was transported. Some calmer hours there were: in them I hearkened to him. Resection had often it's turn, and the love of study and the desire of knowledge have never quite abandoned me. I am not therefore entirely unprepared for the life I will lead, and it is not without reason that I promise myself more satisfaction in the latter part of it, than I ever knew in the former.

Your lordship may think this perhaps a little too fanguine, for one who has loft fo much time already: you may put me in mind, that human life has no fecond fpring, no fecond fummer: you may afk me, what I mean by fowing in autumn, and whether I hope to reap in winter? My answer will be, that I think very differently from most men, of the time we have to pass, and the business we have to do in this world. I think we have more of one. and less of the other, than is commonly supposed. Our want of time, and the shortness of human life, are some of the principal common-place complaints, which we prefer against the established order of things: they are the grumblings of the vulgar, and the pathetic lamentations of the philo-

# 416 Of the true Use of Let. 28

philosopher; but they are impertinent and impious in both. The man of business despises the man of pleasure, for squandering his time away; the man of pleasure pities or laughs at the man of business, for the fame thing: and yet both concur superciliously and absurdly to find fault with the Supreme Being, for having given them for little time. The philosopher, who mispends it very often as much as the others; joins in the fame cry, and authorises this impiety. Theophrastus thought it extremely hard to die at ninety, and to go out of the world when he had just learned how to live in it. His master ARITOTLE found fault with nature, for treating man in this respect worse than several other animals: both very unphilosophically! and I love Seneca the better for his quarrel with the Stagirite on this head. We fee, in fo many instances, a just proportion of things, according to their feveral relations to one another, that philosophy should lead us to conclude this proportion perferved, even where we cannot discern it; instead of leading us to conclude that it is not preferved where we do not discern it, or where we think that we fee the contrary. To conclude otherwise, is shocking prefumption. It is to prefume that the fystem

Let. 2. RETIREMENTANDSTUDY. 417

of the universe would have been more wifely contrived, if creatures of our low rank among intellectual natures had been called to the councils of the Most High: or that the Creator ought to mend his work by the advice of the creature. That life which feems to our felf-love fo short, when we compare it with the ideas we frame of eternity, or even with the duration of some other beings, will appear fufficient, upon a less partial view, to all the ends of our creation, and of a just proportion in the fuccessive course of generations. The term itself is long: we render it short; and the want we complain of flows from our profusion, not from our poverty. We are all arrant spendthrifts: some of us dissipate our estates on the trifles, some on the superfluities, and then we all complain that we want the necessaries of life. The much greatest part never reclaim, but die bankrupts to Gop and man. Others reclaim late, and they are apt to imagine, when they make up their accounts and fee how their fund is diminished, that they have not enough remaining to live upon, because they have not the whole. But they deceive themselves: they were richer than they thought, and they are not yet poor. If they husband well the remainder, it will be Dd found

# 418 Of the true Use of Let. 2.

found fufficient for all the necessaries, and for some of the superfluities, and trifles too perhaps, of life: but then the former order of expence must be inverted; and the necessaries of life must be provided, before they put themselves to any cost for the trifles or superfluities.

LET us leave the men of pleasure and of business, who are often candid enough to own that they throw away their time, and thereby to confess that they complain of the Supreme Being for noother reason than this, that he has not proportioned his bounty to their extravagance: let us confider the scholar and the philosopher; who, far from owning that he throws any time away, reproves others for doing it: that folemn mortal, who abstains from the pleasures, and declines the business of the world, that he may dedicate his whole time to the fearch of truth, and the improvement of know-When fuch an one complains of the shortness of human life in general, or of his remaining share in particular; might not a man, more reasonable tho less solemn, expostulate thus with him?

"Your complaint is indeed confistent with your practice; but you would not, "possibly,

### Let. 2. RETIREMENT and STUDY. 419

" possibly, renew your complaint if you " reviewed your practice. Tho reading makes a scholar; yet every scholar is " not a philosopher, nor every philosopher " a wife man. It cost you twenty years " to devour all the volumes on one fide of " your library: you came out a great critic in Latin and Greek, in the oriental " tongues, in history and chronology; but " you was not fatisfied; you confessed that " these were the " literae nihil sanantes;" " and you wanted more time to acquire " other knowledge. You have had this " time: you have passed twenty years " more on the other fide of your library, " among philosophers, rabbies, commen-" tators, schoolmen, and whole legions of " modern doctors. You are extremely " well versed in all that has been written " concerning the nature of God, and of " the foul of man; about matter and form, " body and spirit; and space, and eternal " effences, and incorporeal fubstances; " and the rest of those profound speculations- You are a mafter of the con-" troversies that have arisen about nature " and grace, about predeftination and free-" will, and all the other abstrufe questions " that have made fo much noise in the " schools, and done so much hurt in the " world. Dd2

" world. You are going on, as fast as " the infirmities you have contracted " will permit, in the same course of stu-" dy; but you begin to foresee that you " shall want time, and you make grievous " complaints of the shortness of human is life. Give me leave now to ask you, " how many thousand years God must pro-" long your life, in order to reconcile you " to his wisdom and goodness? It is plain, " at least highly probable, that a life as " long as that of the most aged of the pa-" triarchs would be too short to answer " your purposes; since the researches and " disputes in which you are engaged, have " been already for a much longer time the " objects of learned enquiries, and remain " still as imperfect and undetermined as " they were at first. But let me ask you " again, and deceive neither yourself nor " me; Have you, in the course of these " forty years, once examined the first prin-" ciples, and the fundamental facts, on " which all those questions depend, with " an absolute indifference of judgment, " and with a scrupulous exactness? with " the same that you have employed in " examining the various confequences " drawn from them, and the heterodox " opinions about them? Have you not " taken

# Let.2. RETIREMENTANDSTUDY. 421

" taken them for granted, in the whole " course of your studies? Or, if you have " looked now and then on the state of the proofs brought to maintain them, have "you not done it as a mathematician " looks over a demonstration formerly " made, to refresh his memory, not to sa-" tisfy any doubt? If you have thus ex-" amined, it may appear marvellous to " fome, that you have spent so much time " in many parts of those studies, which have reduced you to this hectic condi-"tion, of fo much heat and weakness. But " if you have not thus examined, it must " be evident to all, nay to yourfelf on the " least cool reflection, that you are still, " notwithstanding all your learning, in a " state of ignorance. For knowledge can " alone produce knowledge: and without " fuch an examination of axioms and facts, " you can have none about inferences."

In this manner one might expostulate very reasonably with many a great scholar, many a profound philosopher, many a dogmatical casuist. And it serves to set the complaints about want of time, and the shortness of human life, in a very ridiculous but a true light. All men are taught their opinions, at least on the most import-

ant subjects, by rote; and are bred to defend them with obstinacy. They may be taught true opinions; but whether true or false, the same zeal for them, and the same attachment to them, is every where inspired alike. The Tartar believes as heartily that the foul of For inhabits in his DAIRO, as the Christian believes the hypostatic union, or any article in the Athanasian creed. Now this may answer the ends of fociety in some respects, and do well enough for the vulgar of all ranks: but it is not enough for the man who cultivates his reason, who is able to think, and who ought to think, for himself. To such a man, every opinion that he has not himfelf either framed, or examined strictly, and then adopted, will pass for nothing more than what it really is, the opinion of other men; which may be true or false for ought he knows. And this is a state of uncertainty, in which no fuch man can remain, with any peace of mind, concerning those things that are of greatest importance to us here, and may be so hereafter. He will make them therefore the objects of his first and greatest attention. If he has lost time. he will lose no more; and when he has acquired all the knowledge he is capable of acquiring on these subjects, he will be the less

# Let.2. RETIREMENT and STUDY. 423

less concerned whether he has time to acquire any farther. Should he have passed his life in the pleasures or business of the world; whenever he sets about this work, he will soon have the advantage over the learned philosopher. For he will soon have secured what is necessary to his happiness, and may sit down in the peaceful enjoyment of that knowledge: or proceed with greater advantage and satisfaction to the acquisition of new knowledge; whilst the other continues his search after things that are in their nature, to say the best of them, hypothetical, precarious, and superfluous.

Bur this is not the only rule, by observing of which we may redeem our time, and have the advantage over those who imagine they have so much in point of knowledge over your lordship or me, for instance, and who despise our ignorance. The rule I mean is this; to be on our guard against the common arts of delufion, spoken of already; which, every one is ready to confess, have been employed to missead those who differ from him. Let us be diffident of ourselves, but let us be diffident of others too: our own passions may lead us to reason wrong; but the Dd4 paffions

Of the true Use of Let. 2. passions and interest of others may have the same effect. It is in every man's power, who fets about it in good earnest, to prevent the first: and when he has done fo. he will have a conscious certainty of it. To prevent the last, there is one, and but one fure method; and that is, to remount, in the furvey of our opinions, to the first and even remotest principles on which they are founded. No respect, no habit, no feeming certainty whatever, must divert us from this: any affectation of diverting us from it ought to increase our suspicion: and the more important our examination is, the more important this method of conducting it becomes. Let us not be frighted from it, either by the supposed difficulty or length of fuch an enquiry; for, on the contrary, this is the easiest and the shorteft, as well as the only fure way of arriving at real knowledge; and of being able to place the opinions we examine in the different classes of true, probable, or false, according to the truth, probability, or falshood of the principles from whence they are deduced. If we find these principles false, and that will be the case in many instances, we stop our enquiries on these heads at once; and fave an immense deal of time that we should otherwise mispend.

The

# Let.2. RETIREMENT and STUDY. 425

The Mussulman who enters on the examination of all the disputes that have arisen between the followers of OMAR and Ali and other doctors of his law, must acquire a thorough knowledge of the whole Mahometan system; and will have as good aright to complain of want of time, and the shortness of human life, as any pagan or Christian divine or philosopher: but without all this time and learning, he might have discovered that Mahomet was an impostor, and that the Koran is an heap of absurdities.

In short, my lord, he who retires from the world, with a refolution of employing his leifure, in the first place to re-examine and fettle his opinions, is inexcufable if he does not begin with those that are most important to him, and if he does not deal honeftly by himfelf. To deal honeftly by himself, he must observe the rule I have infifted upon, and not fuffer the delufions of the world to follow him into his retreat. Every man's reason is every man's oracle: this oracle is best consulted in the silence of retirement; and when we have fo confulted, whatever the decision be, whether in favor of our prejudices or against them, we must rest satisfied : since nothing can be

# 426 Of the true Use of Let. 2.

more certain than this, that he who follows that guide in the fearch of truth, as that was given him to lead him to it, will have a much better plea to make, whenever or wherever he may be called to account, than he, who has refigned himself, either deliberately or inadvertently, to any authority upon earth.

WHEN we have done this, concerning God, ourselves, and other men; concerning the relations in which we stand to him and to them; the duties that refult from these relations; and the positive will of the Supreme Being, whether revealed to us in a supernatural, or discovered by the right use of our reason in a natural way——we have done the great business of our lives. Our lives are so sufficient for this that they afford us time for more, even when we begin late: especially if we proceed in every other enquiry by the same rule. To discover error in axioms, or in first principles grounded on facts, is like the breaking of a charm. The inchanted castle, the steep rock, the burning lake disappear: and the paths that lead to truth, which we imagined to be fo long, fo embarraffed, and fo difficult, shew as they are, short, open, and eafy. When we have fecured the

#### Let.2. RETIREMENT and STUDY. 427

the necessaries, there may be time to amuse ourselves with the superfluities, and even with the trifles, of life. " Dulce est desi-" pere," faid HORACE: " Vive la baga-" telle! fays Swift. I oppose neither; not the Epicurean, much less the Christian philosopher: but I insist that a principal part of these amusements be the amusements of study and reflection, of reading and conversation. You know what conversation I mean; for we lose the true advantage of our nature and constitution, if we fuffer the mind to come, as it were, to a stand. When the body, instead of acquiring new vigor, and tafting new pleafures, begins to decline, and is fated with pleasures, or grown incapable of taking them, the mind may continue still to improve and indulge itself in new enjoyments. Every advance in knowledge opens a new scene of delight; and the joy that we feel in the actual possession of one, will be heightened by that which we expect to find in another: fo that, before we can exhauft this fund of successive pleasures, death will come to end our pleasures and our pains at once. " In his studiis laboribusque vi-" venti, non intelligitur quando obrepit " fenectus: ita fensim sine sensu aetas se-" nefcit,

428 Of the true Use of Let. 2. "nescit, nec subito frangitur, sed diutur-"nitate extinguitur."

This, my lord, is the wifest, and the most agreeable manner in which a man of sense can wind up the thread of life. Happy is he whose situation and circumstances give him the opportunity and means of doing it! Tho he should not have made any great advances in knowledge, and should set about it late, yet the task will not be found difficult, unless he has gone too far out of his way; and unless he continues too long to halt, between the dissipations of the world, and the leisure of a retired life:

—Vivendi recte qui prorogat horam, Rusticus expectat dum defluat amnis,—

You know the rest. I am sensible, more sensible than any enemy I have, of my natural infirmities, and acquired disadvantages: but I have begun, and I will persist: for he who jogs forward on a battered horse, in the right way, may get to the end of his journey; which he cannot do, who gallops the sleetest courser of New-Market, out of it.

Adieu,

#### Let.2. RETIREMENT and STUDY. 429

ADIEU, my dear lord. Tho I have much more to fay on this fubject, yet I perceive, and I doubt you have long perceived, that I have faid too much, at least for a letter, already. The rest shall be reserved for conversation whenever we meet: and then I hope to confirm, under your lordship's eye, my speculations by my practice. In the mean time let me refer you to our friend Pope. He says I made a philosopher of him: I am sure he has contributed very much, and I thank him for it, to the making an hermit of me.

STATE OF THE CLASE SERVICE LANGER SILE OF E LOCAL AND SOLVE BUREL of Grant and Allen and Street Toylor Saroka Jana and the Sarah 19 Printed and the statement beginned. Addition of the second 

## REFLECTIONS

UPON

tite, i generalicati cocci, ca which the

-mi ad tan year allapa ani T 11 in

EXILE.

explication in control care bear

Day Hadding of the planters, being to

### ADVERTISEMENT.

THAT the public may not be imposed upon by any lame and unequal translation, of the following treatise, from the French, in which language part of it has been lately printed, and retailed in a monthly Mercury; it is judged proper to add it here, at the end of this volume, from the author's original manuscript, as he himself had finished it for the press.

#### REFLECTIONS

UPON

## EXILE\*.

MDCCXVI.

DISSIPATION of mind, and length of time, are the remedies to which the greatest part of mankind trust in their afflictions. But the first of these works a temporary, the second a slow, effect: and both are unworthy of a wise man. Are we to fly from ourselves that we may fly from our missortunes, and fondly to imagine that the disease is cured because we find means to get some moments of respite from pain? Or shall we expect from time, the physician of brutes, a lingering and

\* Several passages of this little treatise are taken from Seneca: and the whole is writ with some allusion to his style and manner, "quanquam non omnino temere sit, quod de sententiis illius que"ritur Fabius," &c. Eras. De sen. jud.

E e uncertain

uncertain deliverance? Shall we wait to be happy till we can forget that we are miferable, and owe to the weakness of our faculties a tranquillity which ought to be the effect of their strength? Far otherwise. Let us set all our past and our present afflictions at once before our eyes\*. Let us resolve to overcome them, instead of flying from them, or wearing out the sense of them by long and ignominious patience. Instead of palliating remedies, let us use the incision-knife and the caustic, search the wound to the bottom, and work an immediate and radical cure.

The recalling of former misfortunes ferves to fortify the mind against later. He must blush to sink under the anguish of one wound, who surveys a body seamed over with the scars of many, and who has come victorious out of all the conflicts wherein he received them. Let sight, and tears, and fainting under the lightest strokes of adverse fortune, be the portion of those unhappy people whose tender minds a long course of felicity has enervated: while such, as have passed through years of calamity,

<sup>.</sup> SEN. De con. ad Hel.

REFLECTIONS upon EXILE. 435 bear up, with a noble and immoveable constancy, against the heaviest. Uninterrupted misery has this good effect, as it continually torments, it finally hardens.

Such is the language of philosophy; and happy is the man who acquires the right of holding it. But this right is not to be acquired by pathetic discourse. Our con. duct can alone give it us: and therefore, instead of presuming on our strength, the furest method is to confess our weakness. and, without loss of time, to apply ourfelves to the study of wisdom. This was the advice which the oracle gave to Zeno\*, and there is no other way of fecuring our tranquillity amidst all the accidents to which human life is exposed. Philosophy has, I know, her THRASOS, as well as War: and among her fons many there have been, who, while they aimed at being more than men, became fomething lefs. The means of preventing this danger are easy and sure. It is a good rule, to examine well before we addict ourselves to any sect: but I think it is a better rule, to addict ourselves to none. Let us hear them all, with a perfect indifferency on which fide the truth

\* DIOG. LAERT.

lies: and, when we come to determine, let nothing appear fo venerable to us as our own understandings. Let us gratefully accept the help of every one who has endeavoured to correct the vices, and strengthen the minds of men; but let us chuse for ourselves, and yield universal affent to Thus, that I may instance the sect none. already mentioned, when we have laid afide the wonderful and furprifing fentences, and all the paradoxes of the Portique, we shall find in that school such doctrines as our unprejudiced reason submits to with pleasure, as nature dictates, and as experience con-Without this precaution, we run the risque of becoming imaginary kings, and real flaves. With it, we may learn to affert our native freedom, and live independent on fortune.

In order to which great end, it is neceffary that we stand watchful, as centinels, to discover the secret wiles and open attacks of this capricious goddes, before they reach us\*. Where she falls upon us unexpected, it is hard to resist; but those who wait for her, will repel her with ease. The sudden invasion of an enemy over-

<sup>\*</sup> SEN. De con ad Hel.

throws fuch as are not on their guard; but they who foresee the war, and prepare themselves for it before it breaks out, stand, without difficulty, the first and the fiercest I learned this important leffon long ago, and never trufted to fortune even while she seemed to be at peace with me. The riches, the honors, the reputation, and all the advantages which her treacherous indulgence poured upon me, I placed fo, that she might fnatch them away without giving me any diffurbance. I-kept a great interval between me She took them, but she could not tear them from me. No man fuffers by bad fortune, but he who has been deceived by good. If we grow fond of her gifts, fancy that they belong to us, and are perpetually to remain with us, if we lean upon them, and expect to be confidered for them; we shall fink into all the bitterness of grief, as soon as these false and transitory benefits pass away, as soon as our vain and childish minds, unfraught with folid pleasures, become destitute even of those which are imaginary. But, if we do not fuffer ourselves to be transported by prosperity, neither shall we be reduced by adversity. Our souls will be of proof against the dangers of both these states:

Ee3

and

and, having explored our firength, we shall be sure of it; for in the midst of felicity, we shall have tried how we can bear misfortune.

IT is much harder to examine and judge, than to take up opinions on trust; and therefore the far greatest part of the world borrow from others, those which they entertain concerning all the affairs of life and death\*. Hence it proceeds that men are fo unanimously eager in the pursuit of things, which far from having any inherent real good, are varnished over with a fpecious and deceitful gloss, and contain nothing answerable to their appearances +. Hence it proceeds, on the other hand, that, in those things which are called evils, there is nothing fo hard and terrible as the general cry of the world threatens. The word exile comes indeed harsh to the ear, and strikes us like a melancholy and execrable found, through a certain perfuasion which men have habitually concurred in. the multitude has ordained. But the greatest

<sup>\*</sup> Dum unusquisque mavult credere, quam judicare, nunquam de vita judicatur, semper creditur. Sen. De vita beat.

<sup>+</sup> SEN. De con. ad Hel.

REFLECTIONS upon Exile. 439 part of their ordinances are abrogated by the wife.

REJECTING therefore the judgment of those who determine according to popular opinions, or the first appearances of things, let us examine what exile really is ‡. then, a change of place; and, left you should fay that I diminish the object, and conceal the most shocking parts of it, I add, that this change of place is frequently accompanied by some or all of the following inconveniences: by the loss of the estate which we enjoyed, and the rank which we held; by the loss of that consideration and power which we were in poffession of; by a separation from our family and our friends; by the contempt which we may fall into; by the ignominy with which those who have driven us abroad. will endeavour to fully the innocence of our characters, and to justify the injustice of their own conduct.

ALL these shall be spoke to hereafter. In the mean while, let us consider what evil there is, in change of place, abstractedly and by itself.

\$ SEN. De con. ad Hel.

Ee4

To

To live deprived of one's country is intolerable\*. Is it so? How comes it then to pass that such numbers of men live out of their countries by choice? Observe how the streets of London and of Paris are crowded. Call over those millions by name, and ask them one by one, of what country they are: how many will you find, who, from different parts of the earth, come to inhabit these great cities, which afford the largest opportunities, and the largest encouragement, to virtue and to vice? Some are drawn by ambition, and some are sent by duty; many refort thither to improve their minds, and many to improve their fortunes; others bring their beauty, and others their eloquence, to market. Remove from hence, and go to the utmost extremities of the East or the West: visit the barbarous nations of Africa, or the inhospitable regions of the North: you will find no climate fo bad, no country fo favage, as not to have some people who come from abroad, and inhabit there by choice.

Among numberless extravagancies which have passed through the minds of men, we

<sup>\*</sup> SEN. de con. ad Hel.

may justly reckon for one that notion of a fecret affection, independent of our reason, and superior to our reason, which we are supposed to have for our country; as if there were some physical virtue in every spot of ground, which necessarily produced this effect in every one born upon it.

#### "-Amor patriae ratione valentior omni \*."

As if the heimvei was an universal diftemper, inseparable from the constitution of an human body, and not peculiar to the Swifs, who feem to have been made for their mountains, as their mountains feem to have been made for them\*. tion may have contributed to the fecurity and grandeur of states. It has therefore been not unartfully cultivated, and the prejudice of education has been with care put on it's fide. Men have come in this cafe. as in many, from believing that it ought to be fo, to perfuade others, and even to believe themselves that it is so. Procopius relates that ABGARUS came to Rome, and gained the esteem and friendship of Augustus to fuch a degree, that this emperor could not resolve to let him return home:

<sup>\*</sup> Ov. De Ponto, El. iv.

Card. BENTI. Let.

#### 442 REFLECTIONS upon EXILE.

that ABGARUS brought feveral beafts, which he had taken one day in hunting, alive to Augustus: that he placed in different parts of the Circus fome of the earth which belonged to the places where each of these animals had been caught; that as foon as this was done, and they were turned loofe every one of them ran to that corner where his earth lay: that Augustus, admiring their fentiment of love for their country which nature has graved in the hearts of beafts, and struck by the evidence of the truth, granted the request which ABGARUS immediately preffed upon him, and allowed, tho with regret, the tetrarch to return to Edessa. But this tale deserves just as much credit as that which follows in the same place, of the letter of ABGARUS to JESUS CHRIST, of our Saviour's answer, and of the cure of ABGARUS. There is nothing, furely, more groundless than the notion here advanced, nothing more abfurd. We love the country in which we are born, because we receive particular benefits from it, and because we have particular obligations to it: which ties we may have to another country, as well as to that we are born in; to our country by election, as well as to our country by birth. In all other respects, a wife man looks on himREFLECTIONS upon EXILE. 443 felf as a citizen of the world: and, when you ask him where his country lies, points, like ANAXAGORAS, with his finger to the heavens.

THERE are other persons, again, who have imagined that as the whole universe fuffers a continual rotation, and nature feems to delight in it, or to preferve herfelf by it, so there is in the minds of men, a natural reftleffness, which inclines them to change of place, and to the shifting their habitations\*. This opinion has at least an appearance of truth, which the other wants; and is countenanced, as the other is contradicted, by experience. But, whatever the reasons be, which must have varied infinitely in an infinite number of cases, and an immense space of time; true it is in fact, that the families and nations of the world have been in a continual fluctuation, roaming about on the face of the globe, driving and driven out by turns. What a number of colonies has Asia sent into Europe! The Phoenicians planted the coasts of the Mediterranean sea, and pushed their fettlements even into the ocean. The Etrurians were of Afiatic extraction:

\* SEN. De con. ad Hel.

and

and, to mention no more, the Romans, those lords of the world, acknowledged a Trojan exile for the founder of their empire. How many migrations have there been, in return to these, from Europe into Afia? They would be endless to enumerate; for, besides the Aeolic, the Ionic, and others of almost equal fame, the Greeks, during feveral ages, made continual expeditions, and built cities in feveral parts of Asia. The Gauls penetrated thither too, and established a kingdom. The European Scythians over-ran these vast provinces, and carried their arms to the confines of Egypt. ALEXANDER subdued all from the Hellespont to India, and built towns, and established colonies, to secure his conquests, and to eternise his name. From both these parts of the world Africa has received inhabitants and masters; and what the has received the has given. The Tyrians built the city, and founded the republic, of Carthage; and Greek has been the language of Egypt. In the remotest antiquity we hear of Belus in Chaldaea, and of SESOSTRIS planting his tawny colonies in Colchos: and Spain has been, in these later ages, under the dominion of the Moors. If we turn to Runic history, we find our fathers, the Goths, led by Woden and

and by THOR, their heroes first and their divinities afterwards, from the Asiatic Tartary into Europe: and who can affure us that this was their first migration? They came into Asia perhaps by the east, from that continent to which their fons have lately failed from Europe by the west: and thus, in the process of three or four thoufand years, the fame race of men have pushed their conquests and their habitations round the globe; at least this may be supposed, as reasonably as it is supposed, I think by Grotius, that America was peopled from Scandinavia. The world is a great wilderness, wherein mankind have wandered and jostled one another about from the creation. Some have removed by necessity, and others by choice. One nation has been fond of feizing what another was tired of possessing: and it will be difficult to point out the country which is to this day in the hands of it's first inhabitants.

Thus fate has ordained that nothing shall remain long in the same state: and what are all these transportations of people, but so many public exiles? VARRO, the most learned of the Romans, thought, since

#### 446 REFLECTIONS upon EXILE.

fince Nature \* is the fame wherever we go, that this fingle circumstance was sufficient to remove all objections to change of place, taken by itself, and stripped of the other inconveniences which attend exile. M. Brutus thought it enough that those, who go into banishment, cannot be hindered from carrying their Virtue along with them. Now, if any one judge that each of these comforts is in itself insufficient, he must however confess that both of them, joined together, are able to remove the terrors of exile. For what trifles must all we leave behind us be esteemed, in comparison of the two most precious things which men can enjoy, and which, we are fure, will follow us wherever we turn our steps, the fame Nature, and our proper Virtue +? Believe me, the providence of God has eftablished such an order in the world, that of all which belongs to us the least valuable parts can alone fall under the will of others. Whatever is best is safest; lies out of the reach of human power; can neither be given nor taken away. Such is this great and beautiful work of nature, the world. Such is the mind of man, which contemplates

<sup>\*</sup> SEN. De con. ad Hel. † Ib.

# REFLECTIONS upon EXILE. 447 and admires the world whereof it makes

the noblest part. These are inseparably ours, and as long as we remain in one we shall enjoy the other. Let us march therefore intrepidly wherever we are led by the course of human accidents. Wherever they lead us, on what coast soever we are thrown by them, we shall not find ourfelves absolutely strangers. We shall meet with men and women, creatures of the fame figure, endowed with the fame faculties, and born under the fame laws of nature. We shall see the same virtues and vices, flowing from the fame general principles, but varied in a thousand different and contrary modes, according to that infinite variety of laws and customs which is established for the same universal end, the preservation of society. We shall feel the fame revolution of feafons, and the fame fun and moon \* will guide the course of our year. The fame azure vault, bespangled with stars, will be every where

<sup>\*</sup> PLUT. Of banishment. He compares those who cannot live out of their own country, to the simple people who fancied that the moon of Athens was a finer moon than that of Corinth.

labentem coelo quae ducitis annum.
Virc. Georg.

fpread over our heads. There is no part of the world from whence we may not admire those planets which roll, like ours, in different orbits round the same central sun; from whence we may not discover an object still more stupendous, that army of fixed stars hung up in the immense space of the universe, innumerable suns whose beams enlighten and cherish the unknown worlds which roll around them: and whilst I am ravished by such contemplations as these, whilst my soul is thus raised up to heaven, it imports me little what ground I tread upon.

Brutus\*, in the book which he written on virtue, related that he had feen Marcellus in exile at Mitylene, living in all the happiness which human nature is capable of, and cultivating, with as much affiduity as ever, all kinds of laudable knowledge. He added that this spectacle made him think that it was rather he who went into banishment, since he was to return without the other, than the other who remained in it. O Marcellus, far more happy when Brutus approved thy exile, than when the commonwealth approved

<sup>\*</sup> SEN. De con. ad Hel.

thy confulship! How great a man must thou have been, to extort admiration from him who appeared an object of admiration even to his own CATO! The fame BRUTUS reported further, that CAESAR overshot Mitylene, because he could not stand the fight of MARCELLUS reduced to a state fo unworthy of him. His restoration was at length obtained by the public intercession of the whole senate, who were dejected with grief to fuch a degree, that they feemed all upon this occasion to have the fame fentiments with Brurus, and to be suppliants for themselves, rather than for MARCELLUS\*. This was to return with honor; but furely he remained abroad with greater, when BRUTUS could not refolve to leave him, nor CAESAR to see him; for both of them bore witness of his merit. BRUTUS grieved, and CAESAR blushed to go to Rome without him.

Q. METELLUS NUMIDICUS had undergone the same fate some years before, while the people, who are always the surest in-

Ff

**ftruments** 

<sup>\*</sup> MARCELLUS was assassinated at Athens, in his return home, by CHILO, an old friend, and fellow-foldier of his. The motive of CHILO is not explained in history. CAESAR was suspected, but he seems to be justified by the opinion of BRUTUS.

#### 452 REFLECTIONS upon EXILE.

struments of their own servitude, were laying under the conduct of MARIUS, the foundations of that tyranny which was perfected by CAESAR. METELLUS alone, in the midst of an intimidated senate, and outrageous multitude, refused to swear to the pernicious laws of the tribune SATUR-NINUS. His constancy became his crime, and exile his punishment. A wild and lawless faction prevailing against him, the best men of the city armed in his defence, and were ready to lay down their lives that they might preferve so much virtue to their country. But he, having failed to perfuade, thought it not lawful to constrain. He judged in the phrenfy of the Roman commonwealth, as Plato judged in the dotage of the Athenian. METELLUS knew, that if his fellow-citizens amended, he should be recalled; and if they did not amend, he thought he could be no where worse than at Rome. He went voluntarily into exile, and wherever he paffed he carried the fure symptom of a fickly state. and the certain prognostic of an expiring commonwealth. What temper he continued in abroad will best appear by a fragment of one of his letters which Gellius\*,

<sup>\*</sup> Lib. xvii. cap. 2,

REFLECTIONS upon EXILE. 453 in a pedantic compilation of phrases used by the annalist Q. CLAUDIUS, has preserved for the sake of the word fruniscor. "Illi vero omni jure atque honestate inter- dicti: ego neque aqua neque igne careo: et summa gloria fruniscor." Happy Metellus! happy in the conscience of thy own virtue! happy in thy pious son, and in that excellent friend who resembled thee in merit and in fortune!

RUTILIUS had defended Afia against the extortions of the publicans, according to the strict justice of which he made profession, and to the particular duty of his office. The equestrian order were upon this account his enemies, and the Marian faction was so of course, on account of his probity, as well as out of hatred to Mercity was accused of corruption. The best man was prosecuted by the worst, by Apricius; a name dedicated to infamy\*. Those who had stirred up the false accusation fat as judges, and pronounced the unjust sentence against him. He hardly deigned to

Ff2

defend

There was another Aricros, in the reign of Tiberius, famous for his gluttony; and a third in the time of Trajan.

defend his cause, but retired into the East, where that Roman virtue, which Rome could not bear, was received with honor+. Shall RUTILIUS now be deemed unhappy, when they who condemned him are, for that action, delivered down as criminals to all future generations? when he quitted his country with greater ease than he would suffer his exile to finish? when he alone durst refuse the dictator Sylla, and being recalled home, not only declined to go, but fled farther off?

What do you propose, it may be said, by these examples, multitudes of which are to be collected from the memorials of former ages? I propose to shew that as change of place, simply considered, can render no man unhappy, so the other evils which are objected to exile, either cannot happen to wise and virtuous men; or, if they do happen to them, cannot render them miserable. Stones are hard, and cakes of ice are cold: and allwho feel them, feel them alike\*. But the good or the bad events, which fortune brings upon us, are felt according to what qualities we, not they, have. They are in themselves in-

<sup>+</sup> SEN. L. De prov. cap. 3.

<sup>\*</sup> PLUT. On exile.

REFLECTIONS upon EXILE. 455 different and common accidents, and they acquire strength by nothing but our vice or our weakness. Fortune can dispense neither felicity nor infelicity unless we cooperate with her. Few men, who are unhappy under the loss of an estate, would be happy in the possession of it: and those, who deserve to enjoy the advantages which exile takes away, will not be unhappy when they are deprived of them.

IT grieves me to make an exception to this rule; but Tully was one fo remarkably, that the example can be neither concealed, nor passed over. This great man, who had been the faviour of his country, who had feared, in the support of that cause, neither the infults of a desperate party, nor the daggers of affaffins, when he came to fuffer for the same cause, sunk under the He dishonored that banishment which indulgent providence meant to be the means of rendering his glory complete. Uncertain where he should go, or what he should do, fearful as a woman, and froward as a child, he lamented the loss of his rank, of his riches, and of his splendid popularity. His eloquence ferved only to paint his ignominy in stronger colors. He wept over the ruins of his fine house which CLOPIUS Ff 3

had demolished: and his separation from TERENTIA, whom he repudiated not long afterwards, was perhaps an affliction to him at this time. Every thing becomes intolerable to the man who is once fubdued by grief \*. He regrets what he took no pleasure in enjoying, and, overloaded already, he shrinks at the weight of a feather. Cicero's behaviour, in fhort, was fuch that his friends, as well as his enemies, believed him to have lost his fenses +. CAESAR beheld, with a secret satisfaction. the man, who had refused to be his lieutenant, weeping under the rod of CLODIUS. Pompey hoped to find some excuse for his own ingratitude in the contempt which the friend, whom he had abandoned, exposed himself to. Nay ATTICUS judged him too meanly attached to his former fortune, and reproached him for it. ATTICUS, whose great talents were usury and trimming, who placed his principal merit in being rich, and who would have been noted with infamy at Athens, for keeping well with all fides, and venturing on none §: even

<sup>\*</sup> Mitto caetera intolerabilia. Etenim sletu impedior. L. iii. Ad Attic. ep. 10.

<sup>+</sup> Tam saepe, et tam vehementer objurgas, et animo infirmo esse dicis. Io.

<sup>§</sup> PLUT. Vit. Solon.

REFLECTIONS upon EXILE. 457
ATTICUS blushed for Tully, and the most plausible man alive assumed the style of CATO.

I HAVE dwelt the longer on this instance, because, whilst it takes nothing from the truth which has been established, it teaches us another of great importance. Wife men are certainly superior to all the evils of exile. But in a strict sense he, who has left any one passion in his foul unsubdued, will not deferve that appellation. It is not enough that we have studied all the duties of public and private life, that we are perfectly acquainted with them, and that we live up to them in the eye of the world: a passion that lies dormant in the heart, and has escaped our scrutiny, or which we have observed and indulged as venial, or which we have perhaps encouraged, as a principle to excite and to aid our virtue, may one time or other deftroy our tranquillity. and difference our whole character. virtue has steeled the mind on every fide, we are invulnerable on every fide: but ACHILLES was wounded in the heel. The least part, overlooked or neglected, may expose us to receive a mortal blow. Reafon cannot obtain the absolute dominion of our fouls by one victory. Vice has many Ff 4 referves,

referves, which must be beaten; many strongholds, which must be forced; and we may be found of proof in many trials, without being so in all. We may resist the severest, and yield to the weakest attacks of fortune. We may have got the better of avarice, the most epidemical disease of the mind, and yet be slaves to ambition\*. We may have purged our fouls of the fear of death, and yet fome other fear may venture to lurk behind. This was the case of CICERO. Vanity was his cardinal vice +. It had, I question not, warmed his zeal, quickened his industry, animated the love of his country, and supported his constancy against CATI-LINE: but it gave to CLODIUS an entire victory over him. He was not afraid to

Nec audacem quidem timoris absolvimus; ne prodigum quidem avaritia liberamus. De Benef. L. iv.c. 27. Qui autem habet vitium unum, habet omnia. Ib.

L. v. c. 15.

+ In animo autem gloriae cupido, qualis fuit Ciceronis, plurimum potest. Vel. Pat. L. i.

die,

<sup>\*</sup>Seneca fays the contrary of all this, according to the stoical system, which however he departs from on many occasions. "Si contra unam quamlibet partem fortunae satistibi roborises, idem adversus omnes erit.—Si avaritia dimisit, vehementissima generis humani pessis, moram tibi ambitio non faciet. Si ultimum diem, &c. De Con. ad Hel. Non singula vitia ratio, sed pariter omnia prosternit. In universum semel vincitur. Ibid.

die, and part with estate, rank, honor, and every thing which he lamented the loss of: but he was afraid to live deprived of "Ut vivus haec amitterem\*." He would probably have met death on this occasion with the same firmness with which he faid to Popilius Laenus, his client and his murderer, " Approach, veteran, and, " if at least thou canst do this well, cut off my head." But he could not bear to fee himself, and to be seen by others. stripped of those trappings which he was accustomed to wear. This made him break out into fo many shameful expres-" Possum oblivisci qui fuerim? fions. non sentire qui sim? quo caream ho-" nore? qua gloria?" And speaking of his brother-" Vitavi ne viderem; ne aut " illius luctum squaloremque aspicerem, aut " me, quem ille florentissimum reliquerat. " perditum illi afflictumque offerrem +." He had thought of death, and prepared There were occasions too his mind for it. where his vanity might be flattered by it. But the fame vanity hindered him in his prosperous estate from supposing such a reverse as afterwards happened to him. When it came, it found him unprepared,

<sup>\*</sup> Ep. ad Attic. L. iii. ep. 3, 7, 10. et passim. L. iii. ep. 10. ad Attic.

it furprised him, it stunned him; for he was still fond of the pomp and hurry of Rome, "fumum, et opes, strepitumque" Romae," and unweaned from all those things which habit renders necessary, and which nature has left indifferent.

We have enumerated them above, and it is time to descend into a more particular examination of them. Change of place then may be borne by every man. It is the delight of many. But who can bear the evils which accompany exile? You who ask the question can bear them. Every one who confiders them as they are in themselves, instead of looking at them through the false optic which prejudice holds before our eyes. For what? you have lost your estate: reduce your defires, and you will perceive yourfelf to be as rich as ever, with this confiderable advantage to boot, that your cares will be diminished. Our natural and real wants \* are confined to nar-

Excerp. ex Lib. SEN. falfely fo called.

Si ad naturam vives, nunquam eris pauper; si ad opinionem, nunquam dives. Exiguum natura desiderat, opinio immensum. Sen. Ep. 16.

<sup>\*</sup> Naturalia desideria sinita sunt: ex salsa opinione nascentia ubi desinant non habent, nullus enim terminus salso est. Sen. Ep. 16.

row bounds, whilst those which fancy and custom create are confined to none. Truth lies within a little and certain compass. but error is immense. If we suffer our defires therefore to wander beyond these bounds, they wander eternally. " Nescio " quid curtae semper abest rei." We become necessitous in the midst of plenty. and our poverty encreases with our riches. Reduce your defires, be able to fay with the apostle of Greece, to whom ERASMUS was ready to address his prayers, " quam " multis ipse non egeo!" banish out of your exile all imaginary, and you will fuffer no real wants. The little stream which is left will fuffice to quench the thirst of nature, and that which cannot be quenched by it, is not your thirst, but your diftemper; a diftemper formed by the vicious habits of your mind, and not the effect of exile. How great a part of mankind bear poverty with chearfulness, because they have been bred in it, and are accustomed to it? \* Shall we not be able to acquire, by reason and by reflection, what the meanest artisan possesses by habit? Shall those who have so many advantages

<sup>\*</sup> SEN. De con. ad Hel.

#### 462 REFLECTIONS upon EXILE.

over him, be flaves to wants and necessities of which he is ignorant? The rich, whose wanton appetites neither the produce of one country, nor of one part of the world, can fatisfy, for whom the whole habitable globe is ranfacked, for whom the caravans of the east are continually in march. and the remotest seas are covered with ships; these pampered creatures, sated with superfluity, are often glad to inhabit an humble cot, and to make an homely meal. They run for refuge into the arms of frugality. Madmen that they are, to live always in fear of what they fometimes wish for, and to fly from that life which they find it luxury to imitate! Let us cast our eves backwards on those great men who lived in the ages of virtue, of simplicity, of frugality, and let us blush to think that we enjoy in banishment more than they were masters of in the midst of their glory, in the utmost affluence of their fortune. Let us imagine that we behold a great dictator giving audience to the Samnite ambassadors, and preparing on the hearth his mean repast with the same hand which had so often subdued the enemies of the commonwealth, and borne the triumphal laurel to the capitol. Let us remember

that PLATO had but \* three fervants, and that ZENO had none +. Socrates, the reformer of his country, was maintained, as MENENIUS AGRIPPA, the arbiter of his country was buried, by a contribution §. While Attilius Regulus beat the Carthaginians in Afric, the flight of his ploughman reduced his family to distress at home, and the tillage of his little farm became the public care. Scipio died without leaving enough to marry his daughters, and their portions were paid out of the trea-

\*PLATO's will, in DIOG. LAER. mentions four fervants besides DIANA, to whom he gave her freedom.

APULEIUS makes his estate confist in a little garden near the academy, two servants, a patten for sacrifices, and as much gold as would serve to make

ear-rings for a child.

† Zeno was owner of a thousand talents when he came from Cyprus into Greece, and he used to lend his money out upon ships at an high interest. He kept, in short, a kind of insurance-office. He lost this estate perhaps when he said, "recte sane agit fortuna, quae nos ad philosophiam impellit." Afterwards he received many and great presents from Anticonus. So that his great frugality and simplicity of life, was the essential of his choice, and not of necessity. Vid. Dio. Laer.

§ DIOG. LAER. Vit. Soc. quotes ARISTOXENUS for affirming that SOCRATES used to keep a box, and lived upon the money which was put into it: "Posita igitur arcula, colligisse pecuniam quae daretur;

consumpta autem ea, rursus posuisse?

fury

fury of the state; for sure it was just that the people of Rome should once pay tribute to him, who had established a perpetual tribute on Carthage. After such examples shall we be afraid of poverty? shall we disdain to be adopted into a family which has so many illustrious ancestors? shall we complain of banishment for taking from us what the greatest philosophers, and the greatest heroes of antiquity never enjoyed?

You will find fault perhaps, and attribute to artifice, that I consider singly misfortunes which come altogether on the banished man, and overbear him with their united weight. You could support change of place if it was not accompanied with poverty, or poverty if it was not accompanied with the separation from your family and your friends, with the loss of your rank, confideration, and power, with contempt and ignominy. Whoever he be who reasons in this manner, let him take the following answer. The least of these circumstances is fingly fufficient to render the man miferable who is not prepared for it, who has not divested himself of that passion upon which it is directed to work. But he who has got the mastery of all his passions, who has foreseen all these accidents, and prepared

# REFLECTIONS upon EXILE. 465 prepared his mind to endure them all, will be superior to all of them

be superior to all of them, and to all of them at once as well as singly. He will not bear the loss of his rank, because he can bear the loss of his estate: but he will bear both, because he is prepared for both; because he is free from pride as much as he is from avarice.

You are separated from your family and your friends. Take the lift of them, and look it well over. How few of your family will you find who deferve the name of friends? and how few among these who are really such? Erase the names of such as ought not to stand on the roll, and the voluminous catalogue will foon dwindle into a narrow compass. Regret if you please, your separation from this small remnant. Far be it from me, whilft I declaim against a shameful and vicious weakness of mind, to prescribe the sentiments of a virtuous friendship. Regret your separation from your friends: but regret it like a man who deferves to be theirs. This is strength, not weakness of mind; it is virtue, not vice.

But the least uneasiness under the loss of the rank which we held is ignominious. There is no valuable rank among men,

but that which real merit assigns. The princes of the earth may give names, and institute ceremonies, and exact the observation of them; their imbecility and their wickedness may prompt them to clothe fools and knaves with robes of honor, and emblems of wisdom and virtue: but no man will be in truth superior to another, without superior merit; and that rank can no more be taken from us, than the merit which establishes it. The supreme authority gives a fictitious and arbitrary value tocoin, which is therefore not current alike in all times and in all places; but the real value remains invariable, and the provident man, who gets rid as fast as he can of the droffy piece, hoards up the good Thus merit will not procure the fame confideration univerfally. But what then? the title to this confideration is the fame and will be found alike in every circumftance by those who are wise and virtuous themselves. If it is not owned by fuch as are otherwise, nothing is however taken from us; we have no reason to complain. They confidered us for a rank which we had; for our denomination, not for our intrinsic value. We have that rank, that denomination no longer, and they consider us no longer: they admired

mired in us what we admired not in ourselves. If they learn to neglect us, let us learn to pity them. Their affiduity was importunate: let us not complain of the eafe which this change procures us; let us rather apprehend the feturn of that rank and that power, which, like a funny day, would bring back thefe little infects, and make them fwarm once more about us. I know how apt we are, under specious pretences, to difguife our weaknesses and our vices, and how often we fucceed not only in deceiving the world, but even in deceiving ourselves. An inclination to do good is inseparable from a virtuous mind. and therefore the man, who cannot bear with patience the loss of that rank and power which he enjoyed, may be willing to attribute his regrets to the impossibility which he supposes himself reduced to of fatisfying this inclination. But let fuch an one know, that a wife man contents himfelf with doing as much good as his fituation allows him to do; that there is no fituation wherein we may not do a great deal: and that when we are deprived of greater power to do more good, we escape at the fame time the temptation of doing fome evil.

\* SEN. De con. ad Hel. G g

THE

THE inconveniencies, which we have mentioned, carry nothing along with them difficult to be borne by a wife and virtuous man; and those which remain to be mentioned, contempt and ignominy, can never fall to his lot. It is impossible that he who reverences himself should be despised by others; and how can ignominy affect the man who collects all his ftrength within himself, who appeals from the judgment of the multitude to another tribunal, and lives independent of mankind and of the accidents of life? Caro loft the election of praetor, and that of conful; but is any one blind enough to truth to imagine that thefe repulses reflected any disgrace on him? The dignity of those two magistracies would have been encreased by his wearing them. They fuffered, not CATO.

You have fulfilled all the duties of a good citizen, you have been true to your trust, constant in your engagements, and have pursued the interest of your country without regard to the enemies you created, and the dangers you run. You severed her interest, as much as lay in your power, from those of her factions, and from those of her neighbours and allies too, when they became different. She reaps

reaps the benefit of these services, and you fuffer for them. You are banished, and purfued with ignominy, and those whom you hindered from triumphing at her expence, revenge themselves at yours. The persons, in opposition to whom you served, or even faved the public, conspire and ac-Thefe are complish your private ruin. your accusers, and the giddy ungrateful crowd your judges. Your name is hung up in the tables of proscription, and art joined to malice endeavours to make your best actions pass for crimes, and to stain your character. For this purpose the facred voice of the senate is made to pronounce a lye, and those records, which ought to be the eternal monuments of truth. become the vouchers of imposture and calumny. Such circumstances as these you think intolerable, and you would prefer death to fo ignominious an exile. Deceive not yourself. The ignominy remains with them who perfecute unjustly, not with him who fuffers unjust perfecution. " Recalcitrat undique tutus." Suppose that in the act which banishes you, it was declared that you have some contagious distemper, that you are crooked, or otherwife deformed. This would render the Gg2 legislators

legislators ridiculous\*. The other renders them infamous. But neither one nor the other can affect the man, who in an healthful well proportioned body enjoys a conscience void of all the offences ascribed to Instead of such an exile, would you compound, that you might live at home in ease and plenty, to be the instrument of blending these contrary interests once more together, and of giving but the third place to that of your country? Would you prostitute her power to the ambition of others. under the pretence of securing her from imaginary dangers, and drain her riches into the pockets of the meanest and vilest of her citizens, under the pretence of paying her debts? If you could submit to so infamous a composition, you are not the man to whom I address my discourse, or with whom I will have any commerce: and if you have virtue enough to difdain it, why should you repine at the other alternative? Banishment from such a country, and with fuch circumstances, is like being delivered from prison. Diogenes was driven out of the kingdom of Pontus for counterfeiting the coin, and STRATO-

<sup>\*</sup> The dialogue between CICERO and PHILISCUS. DION. CAS. L. XXXVIII.

REFLECTIONS upon Exile. 469 wicus thought that forgery might be committed in order to get banished from Scriphos. But you have obtained your liberty by doing your duty.

BANISHMENT, with all its train of evils. is fo far from being the cause of contempt, that he who bears up with an undaunted fpirit against them, while so many are dejected by them, erects on his very misfortunes a trophy to his honor: for fuch is the frame and temper of our minds, that nothing strikes us with greater admiration than a man intrepid in the midst of misfortunes. Of all ignominies an ignominious death must be allowed to be the greatest; and yet where is the blasphemer who will presume to defame the death of Socrates\*? This faint entered the prison with the same countenance with which he reduced thirty tyrants, and he took off ignominy from the place; for how could it be deemed a prison when Socrates was there? Phocion was led to execution in the fame city; all those who met the fad procession cast their eyes to the ground, and with throbbing hearts bewailed, not the innocent man, but justice herself, who

> F SEN. De con. ad Hel. G g 3

## 470 REFLECTIONS UPON EXILE.

was in him condemned. Yet there was a wretch found, for monsters are sometimes produced in contradiction to the ordinary rules of nature, who spit in his face as he passed along. Phocion wiped his cheek, smiled, turned to the magistrate, and said, "Admonish this man not to be so naky for the future."

IGNOMINY then can take no hold on Virtue\*; for Virtue is in every condition the same, and challenges the same respect. We applaud the world when the prospers: and when she falls into adversity we applaud her. Like the temples of the Gods. the is venerable even in her ruins. After this must it not appear a degree of madness to defer one moment acquiring the only arms capable of defending us against attacks which at every moment we are exposed to? Our being miserable, or not miserable, when we fall into misfortunes, depends on the manner in which we have enjoyed prosperity. If we have applied ourselves betimes to the study of wisdom, and to the practice of virtue, these evils become indifferent; but if we have neglected to do fo, they become necessary. In

<sup>\*</sup> SEN. De con. ad Hel,

REFLECTIONS upon Exile. 471 one case they are evils, in the other they are remedies for greater evils than themfelves. Zeno \* rejoiced that a shipwreck had thrown him on the Athenian coast: and he owed to the loss of his fortune the acquisition which he made of virtue, of wisdom, of immortality. There are good and bad airs for the mind, as well as for the body. Prosperity often irritates our chronical diffempers, and leaves no hopes of finding any specific but in adversity. In fuch cases banishment is like change of air, and the evils we fuffer are like rough medicines applied to inveterate difeases. What + Anacharsis said of the vine, may aptly enough be faid of prosperity. She bears the three grapes of drunkenness, of pleasure, and of forrow: and happy it is if the last can cure the mischief which the When afflictions fail to former work. have their due effect, the case is desperate. They are the last remedy which indulgent Providence uses: and if they fail, we must languish and die in misery and contempt. Vain men! how feldom do we know what to wish or to pray for? When we pray against misfortunes, and when we fear them most, we want them most. It was for this reason that PYTHAGORAS forbid his

\* Dio. LAER. + SEN. disci-

disciples to ask any thing in particular of God. The shortest and the best prayer which we can address to him, who knows our wants, and our ignorance in asking, is this: "Thy will be done."

Tully fays, in some part of his works, that as happiness is the object of all philofophy, fo the disputes among philosophers arise from their different notions of the fovereign good. Reconcile them in that point, you reconcile them in the reft. The school of Zeno placed this sovereign good in naked virtue, and wound the principle up to an extreme beyond the pitch of nature and truth. A spirit of opposition to another doctrine, which grew into great vogue while Zeno flourished, might occasion this excess. Epicurus placed the sovereign good in pleasure. His terms were wilfully, or accidentally mistaken. His scholars might help to prevent his doctrine, but rivalship enflamed the dispute; for in truth there is not fo much difference between stoicism reduced to reafonable intelligible terms, and genuine orthodox epicurism, as is imagined. felicis animi immota tranquillitas, and the voluptas of the latter are near enough a-kin; and I much doubt whether the firmest hero

of the Portique would have borne a fit of the stone, on the principle of ZENO, with greater magnanimity and patience than EPICURUS did, on those of his own philofophy\*. However, Aristotle took a middle way, or explained himself better. and placed happiness in the joint advantages of the mind, of the body, and of fortune. They are reasonably joined; but certain it is, that they must not be placed on an equal foot. We can much better bear the privation of the last, than of the others; and poverty itself, which mankind is so afraid of, " per mare pauperiem fu-" giens, per faxa, per ignes," is furely preferable to madness, or the stone, the + CHRYSIPPUS thought it better to live madthan not to live! If banishment therefore, by taking from us the advantages of fortune cannot take from us the more valuable advantages of the mind and body, when we have them; and if the same accident is able to restore them to us, when we have

<sup>\*</sup> Compare the representations made so frequently of the doctrine of volupty taught by Epicurus, with the account which he himself gives in his letter to Menoeceus, of the sense wherein he understood this word. Vid. Diog. LAER.

<sup>+</sup> In his third book of Nature, cited by PLU-TARCH, in the treatise on the contradictions of the Stoics.

loft them, banishment is a very slight misfortune to those who are already under the dominion of reason, and a very great blesfing to those who are still plunged in vices which ruin the health both of body and mind. It is to be wished for, in favor of fuch as these, and to be feared by none. If we are in this case, let us second the defigns of Providence in our favor, and make fome amends for neglecting former opportunities by not letting flip the last. " Si nolis fanus, curres hydropicus." We may shorten the evils which we might have prevented, and as we get the better of our diforderly passions, and vicious habits, we shall feel our anxiety diminish in proportion. All the approaches to virtue are comfortable. With how much joy will the man, who improves his misfortunes in this manner, discover that those evils, which he attributed to his exile, fprung from his vanity and folly, and vanish with them! He will see that, in his former temper of mind, he resembled the effeminate prince who could drink no \* water but that of the river Choaspes; or the simple queen, in one of the tragedies of Euripides, who complained bitterly, that she had not

\* PLUT. On banishment.

lighted

REFLECTIONS upon EXILE. 475 lighted the nuptial torch, and that the river Ismenus had not furnished the water at her son's wedding. Seeing his former state in this ridiculous light, he will labor on with pleasure towards another as contrary as possible to it; and when he arrives there, he will be convinced by the strongest of all proofs, his own experience, that he was unfortunate because he was vicious, not because he was banished.

Ir I was not afraid of being thought torefine too much, I would venture to put some advantages of forume, which are due to exile, into the scale against those which we lose by exile. One there is which has been neglected even by great and wife men. DEMETRIUS PHALEREUS, after his expulsion from Athens, became first minister to the king of EGYPT; and THEMISTOCLES found such a reception at the court of Persia, that he used to say his fortune had been lost if he had not been ruined. But DE-METRIUS exposed himself, by his favor under the first PTOLEMY, to a new difgrace under the fecond: and THEMISTOCLES, who had been the captain of a free people, became the vasfal of the prince he had conquered. How much better is it to take hold of the proper advantage of exile, and

to live for ourselves, when we are under no obligation of living for others? SIMILIS, acaptain of great reputation under TRAJAN and Adrian, having obtained leave to setire, passed seven years in his retreat, and then dying, ordered this inscription to be put on his tomb: that he had been mamy years on earth, but that he had lived only feven\*. If you are wife, your leifure will be worthily employed and your retreat will add new lustre to your character. Imitate Thucydides in Thracia, or Xeno-PHON in his little farm at Scillus. In fuch a retreat you may fit down, like one of the inhabitants of Elis, who judged of the Olympic games, without taking any part in them. Far from the hurry of the world, and almost an unconcerned spectator of what passes in it, having paid in a public life what you owed to the present age, pay in a private life what you owe to posterity. Write, as you live, without passion; and build your reputation, as you build your happiness, on the foundations of truth. If you want the talents, the inclination, or the necessary materials for such a work, fall not however into floth. Endeavour to REFLECTIONS upon EXILE. 477 copy after the example of Scipio at Linternum. Be able to say to yourself,

" Innocuas amo delicias doctamque quietem."

Rual amusements, and philosophical meditations, will make your hours glide smoothly on; and if the indulgence of Heaven has given you a friend like LABLIUS, nothing is wanting to make you completely happy.

These are some of those reflections which may serve to fortify the mind under banishment, and under other missfortunes of life, which it is every man's interest to prepare for, because they are common to all men\*: I say they are common to all men; because they who even escape them are equally exposed to them. The darts of adverse fortune are always levelled at our heads. Some reach us, some graze against us, and sly to wound our neighbours. Let us therefore impose an equal temper on our minds, and pay without murmuring the tribute which we owe to humanity. The winter brings cold, and

we must freeze. The summer returns with heat, and we must melt. The inclemency of the air diforders our health, and we must be fick. Here we are exposed to wild beafts, and there to men more favage than the beafts: and if we escape the inconveniencies and dangers of the air and the earth, there are perils by water and perils by fire. This established course of things it is not in our power to change; but it is in our power to assume such a greatness of mind as becomes wife and virtuous men; as may enable us to encounter the accidents of life with fortitude, and to conform ourselves to the order of nature, who governs her great kingdom, the world, by continual mutations. Let us submit to this order, let us be perfuaded that whatever does happen ought to happen, and never be so foolish as to expostulate with nature. The best resolution we can take is to fuffer what we cannot alter, and to purfue, without repining, the road which Providence, who directs every thing, has marked out to us: for it is not enough to follow; and he is but a bad foldier who fighs, and marches on with reluctancy. We must receive the orders with spirit and chearfulness, and not endeavour to slink

REFLECTIONS upon EXILE. 479 out of the post which is assigned to us in this beautiful disposition of things, whereof even our sufferings make a necessary part. Let us address ourselves to God, who governs all, as CLEANTHES did in those admirable verses, which are going to lose part of their grace and energy in my translation of them.

Parent of nature! Master of the World!
Where'er thy Providence directs, behold
My steps with chearful resignation turn.
Fate leads the willing, drags the backward on.
Why should I grieve, when grieving I must bear?
Or take with guilt, what guiltless I might share?

Thus let us speak, and thus let us act. Refignation to the will of God is true magnanimity. But the sure mark of a pusillanimous and base spirit, is to struggle against, to censure the order of Providence, and, instead of mending our own conduct, to set up for correcting that of our maker.

THE END.

